This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

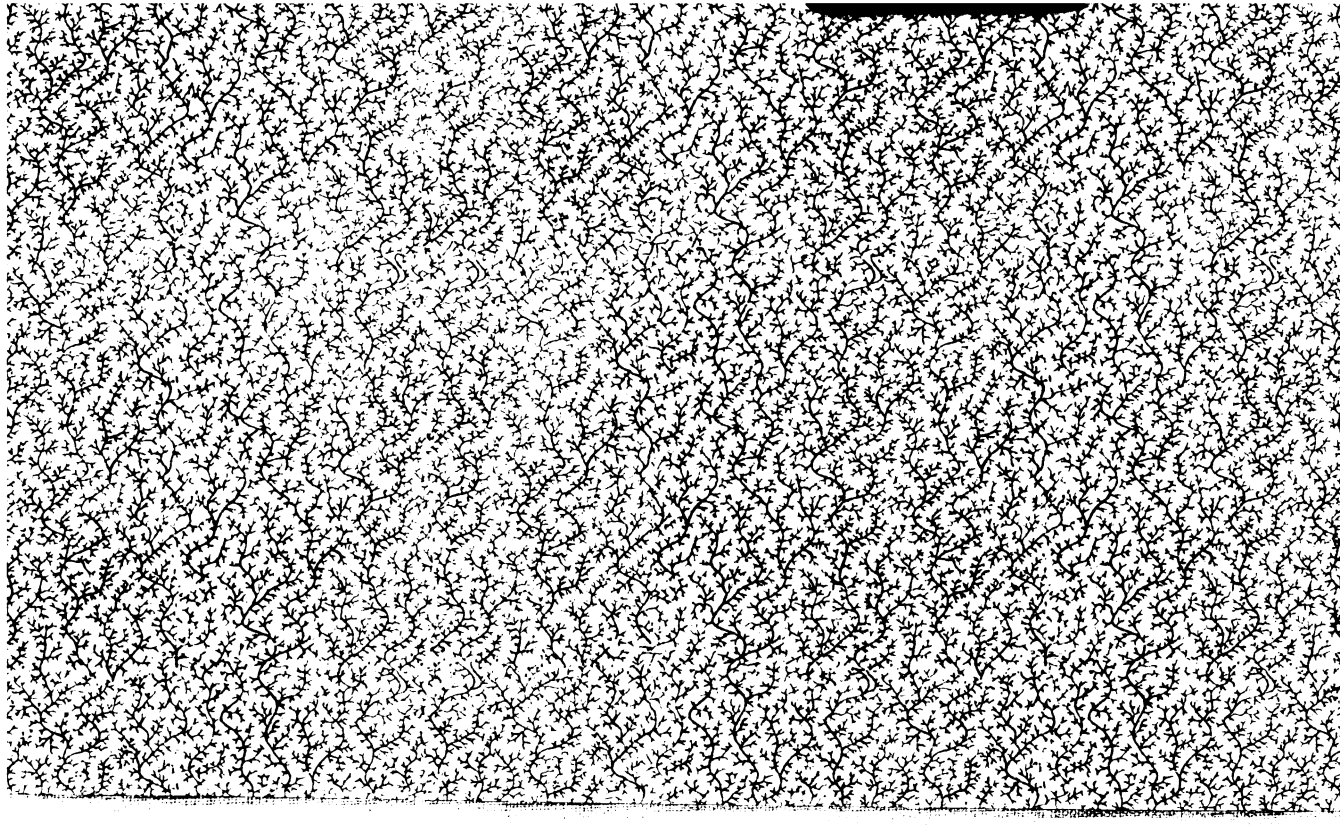
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

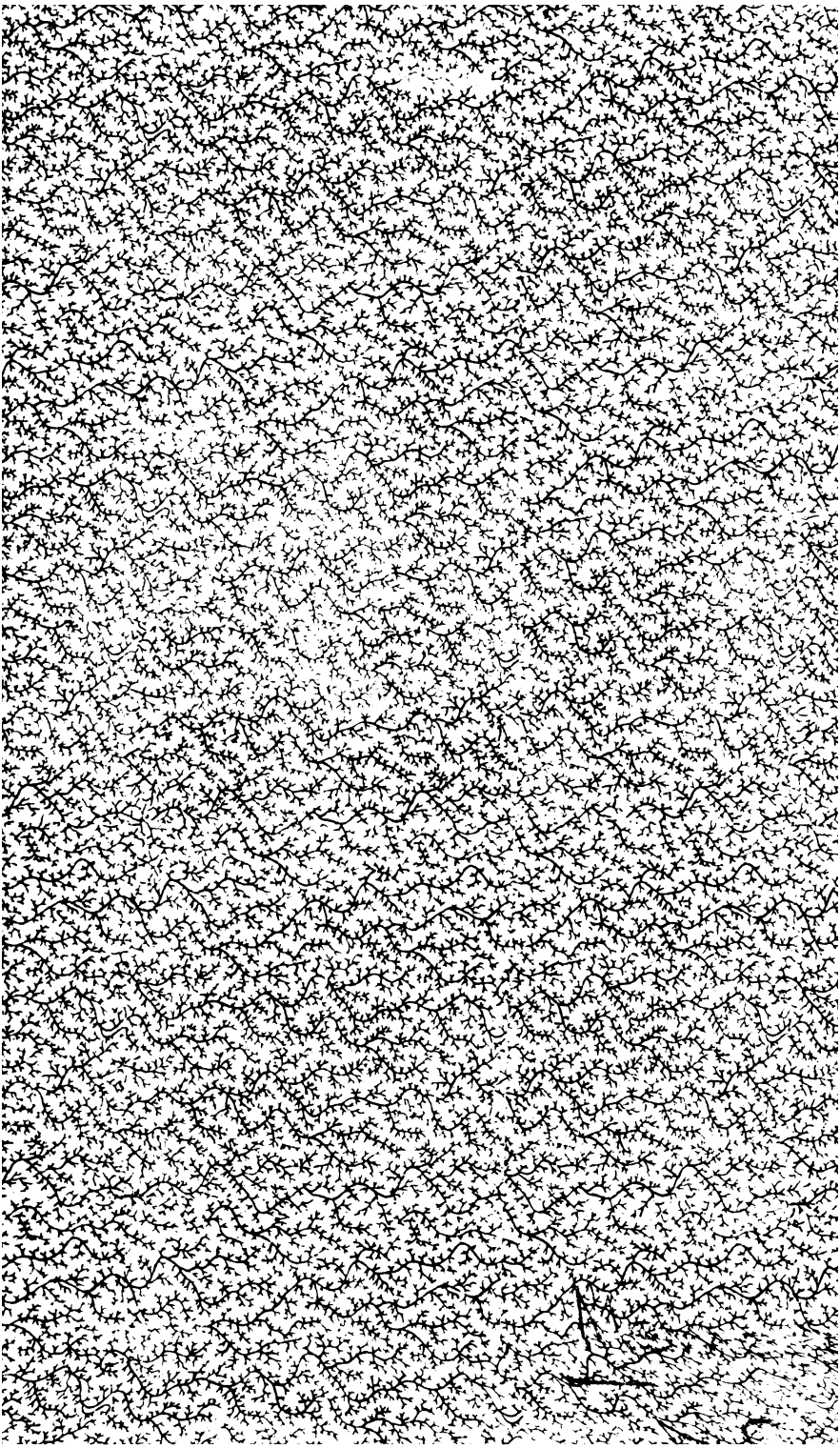
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

3 3433 07489746 7





MEMOIRS

OF

ANDREW WINPENNY,

COUNT DE DEUX SOUS;

COMPRISING

NUMEROUS ADVENTURES IN DIFFERENT COUNTRIES,

AND

EXPOSING THE CRAFT AND ROGUERY

PRACTISED IN LIFE.

BY THE AUTHOR OF "NED CLINTON," "JOE OXFORD," &c. &c.

"How, when competitors like these contend,
Can surly virtue hope to fix a friend?"

LONDON:

W. STRANGE, 21, PATERNOSTER ROW,

AND ALL BOOKSELLERS IN THE KINGDOM.

1838.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
707503
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
1915
R L

COLE AND TAYLOR, PRINTERS, CRANE COURT, FLEET STREET.

MÉMOIRS

OF

ANDREW WINPENNY,

COUNT DE DEUX SOUS.

CHAPTER I.

" By education most have been misled,
So they believe because they so were bred;
The priest continues what the nurse began,
And thus the child imposes on the man!"

THE sceptic says, " man does every thing by custom:" he affirms, too, that honesty, dishonesty, justice and injustice, are but names, attached by us to certain actions, according to the education we have received.

Education and custom, most assuredly, hold dominion over man; if they did not, how could it happen that a deed which in *one* country is denounced as being criminal, in another state brings commendation and pecuniary reward to the individual who has perpetrated it? For example, in the Spartan and some others of the states of olden times, *theft*, when ably achieved, was considered so highly meritorious and honourable, that he who (like the brave Spartan youth, whose bowels were torn out by the stolen fox he held under his frock) died perseveringly denying a robbery by him committed, was considered as having been *a hero*, not only meriting the admiration of his own time, but also worthy of having his fame transmitted down to posterity by the ablest historians among his applauding countrymen.

In modern times, throughout all countries, the successful robber is applauded for his masterly conduct. Yea! he is rewarded with the proudest distinctions. In fine, robbery leads to great wealth, and, under monarchical governments, overgrown wealth ensures aristocratic rank to its possessor, which with management is made to yield him and his posterity a perpetuity of power and place, at the suffering people's expense.

To illustrate this fact, scrutinize into the long list of aristocratic titles. There it will be found, that, with few exceptions, these honours have been granted to the spurious issue of royalty, and to

unsparing plunderers, some of them ruthlessly terrible slayers of their fellow-men—others, practitioners of the law's infamy, or else robbers of the state they were paid to serve;—a few, perhaps, owe their advancement to the more hazardous, yet less dishonest, practices of gaming, sycophancy, and usury.

Those noblest spirits of mankind, the aboriginal tribes of North American Indians, *openly* reward the bravely-daring thief; but civilized governments, actuated by baser principles, *covertly* render tenfold greater services to the very vilest of thieves, even to such as risk nothing themselves, but cold-heartedly administer to the law's impositions and delays—to thieves who preside over courts, where, so terrific is the iniquity practised, millions of money are annually pillaged and partitioned out among harpies, who well know that the proper owners of much of that wealth are incarcerated in prison, or else lingering life away in hopeless pauperism.

The more dispassionately we examine into the subject, the better shall we satisfy ourselves that *theft* is not thought to be dishonourable in the most civilized of countries. The crime, when publicly detected, may be punished; but that is only in ordinary cases, where persons of no influence are the criminals, or the crime itself accords not with the views of men in power.

To exemplify the assertion just made—a state minister, whose administration is marked by unnecessary warfare, the grossest public rapine, a greedy seizure of places for his progeny, and of wasteful pensions for the partisans of corruption, usually retires from office, rewarded with an advanced title and a large grant from the public purse, instead of being brought to a public trial, and ignominiously punished for his infamous misdeeds.

Then again: that man who joins not in parliamentary debate, yet is (as if ironically) termed "the speaker," as likewise lords—chancellors, herds of ambassadors, and other enormously overpaid servants of the state, after they have realized immense fortunes from the golden showers poured on them at the nation's expense, are allowed to further burden it by getting pensions granted for themselves, and not unfrequently for their wives, children, and affinity. Yet as these abuses are imposed on the state by men in authority over it, common sense is so outraged to meet their pleasure, that they are not denominated and considered what they really ought to be—so many infamous thefts.

The sceptic must be correct in his assertion! Honesty, dishonesty, justice and injustice, are words only, which the great bandy about at pleasure, and attach to individuals according to their success in life; were they otherwise, the incongruous laws of civilized states would be pronounced *barbarous* and *infamous*.

Justice, as she is administered, sentences to death the poor man convicted of crime, which the great employ armies to perpetrate; and she unhesitatingly transports him for a petty theft to a distant colony; thus putting the community to great expense, and punishing it to improve the condition of the guilty.

Honesty should be sought after at the fountain head of justice; and here is a specimen of the disinterestedness of the fair dame. A certain court of chancery took charge of a million of money bequeathed to its care by a superannuated merchant, to accumulate at compound interest for half a century, and this *honest* court charged *only* the interest upon the million during the half century for abusing the trust.

Unquestionably, the directors of certain public companies must be sceptics to the heart's core. They cringe to get themselves employed in the direction, but when snugly seated there, they bribe the most compliant of the law tribe to assist them in concocting a deed of settlement, of a nature to ensnare the other proprietors in the meshes of their deadly net. They put the company to an expense for costly feasts, at which, to blind the uninitiated, they trumpet forth in set speeches the praises of each other. And does not every one know that they grant extravagant salaries to the partisans whom they employ, without regard to their qualifications, while that in jobs understood only by themselves, they (like a prodigal monarch, throwing his grievously taxed subjects' money among a mob of foreigners) lavish away the company's funds right and left, until the company is brought to a state of insolvency by the very men employed to uphold it?

Yes! these deeds, and many more such, are the every-day deeds enacted by certain directors; yet, like the assassins of the arch-butcher Cæsar, these directors are all of them "*honourable* men!"

Assuredly, the words honesty, dishonesty, justice and injustice, can be no more than cant terms. If what they seemingly represent really existed, is it not impossible that there could be any exhorbitantly overpaid bishops? For who in the shape of man, having the two best of these monitors to guide him, could be so wickedly degraded as to preach humility and poverty, while himself living, bloated with pride, and distressing an entire county for money to uphold his princely extravagance, and to fund or purchase more than a princely revenue in land for his posterity!

Should unsophisticated honesty and justice rise from their present prostration in certain persecuted kingdoms, what, in their hallowed names, would become of their bishops? Poor, wretched *saints;* would not their consciences smite them? Honesty and justice would advocate the clothing of soldiers in *all* the cloth a munificent nation gives for their use; not curtail their garments to enrich honourable general officers with the tailor-like spoil, and gloss over the transaction by terming the price paid for the overplus cloth—*their off-reckonings!* Nor would honesty and justice consent to burthen a people, by making them pay three general officers for each of their regiments, and an admiral for every one of their ships

Honesty and justice would condense the laws of a country, and thereby do away with the great cause of lawsuits. Honesty and justice would abolish iniquitous corn-laws, which cause the toiling multitude to eat their bread at twofold its proper price, that a tax

of thirty millions of pounds may be levied to uphold landholders, who, as honest men, should themselves repudiate the infamous monopoly. Honesty and justice would make the judge blush at sitting in the seat of judgment, until his salary had been reduced to one-third part of what this luminary of inconsistency now receives.

The whole of Europe, the republics of Switzerland alone exempted, affords incontrovertible testimony, that, as far as two of these qualities are concerned, the sceptic is not mistaken in the opinion he has advanced; therefore, should honesty and justice be sought after, it is either in Switzerland, or in some happy republic across the Atlantic, where they are to be found.

We, however, have numerous casuists, who, contrary to the sceptic's opinion of the reality of these qualities, boldly assert, that dishonesty and injustice have taken up their permanent abode with us, and that they shine forth in all trades and professions; in evidence of which, they insist on it, that *he* who cheats with most effect is the best craftsman; while that religion itself is made a trade of, wherein the grossest impostors are the most successful professors. In a word, these learned casuists and the sceptic are at variance on every point; but, Philosophy whispers, that there may be much sound truth in both their opinions; therefore, leaving the generous reader to form his own judgment on my character by the following memoirs, wherein every particular, however detrimental to my fame, shall be related with candour, I proceed to their relation, first briefly observing, in extenuation of my faults and of those of my associates, that the enlightened Jesuit maintains, that "education moulds the conscience, and crime cannot be greater than the conscience makes it."

CHAPTER II.

"The worldly priest, to sport an equipage,
Luxurious feed, and fill his silken purse,
In legal strife too often will engage
For tithes or dues, which gains him many a curse."

PRIDE is more costly to many persons than hunger, cold, and clothing.

Sensible as I feel of this truth, I shall strenuously endeavour to get rid of so worthless an attendant; for, that the stately dame accompanies me everywhere I have good reasons for believing, inasmuch as I perceive her to be a shadow-like companion to nearly the whole of my acquaintances.

To prove myself sincere in my professions, I shall, in penning these my Memoirs, pay the strictest possible regard to truth; and, however incredible the circumstance may appear to high-minded aristocratic personages, so far gain the victory over pride, as to waive those pretensions to exalted parentage which many persons in my situation would build largely upon.

To be brief, then, I have strong grounds for being satisfied as to the identity of my parent on the maternal side; and, however mortifying this moiety of information may be to the pride attendant on many possessors of ancient titles, assuredly it is all man can rest assured of on this side of the grave.

The good woman, Diana Winpenny, who fed and clothed me until I had entered into my nineteenth year, invariably called me *her* child; and as she was not in easy circumstances in life, I can see no reason for believing she would have performed those parental duties by me without an adequate reward, had I not really been her offspring, while that she never received any pecuniary remuneration on my account is quite certain. However, as it is in the line of possibility that I may leave legitimate issue behind me, who, to fabricate another pedigree for our family, may be desirous of tracing out my descent, I shall now publicly avow that I have repeatedly heard the well-known accoucheur who ushered me into the world, as also two aged dames who were present in Diana's chamber at the time of her delivery, solemnly declare me to be truly and indisputably her own offspring.

My parentage is far from being flattering to pride; yet it may be worthy of observation here, to show the great uncertainty attached to heraldic honours, that had Diana Winpenny been the eldest sister,

of a king of Madagascar, instead of a poor countryman's wife, which she was at the period of my birth, I should, though illegitimately begotten, as her first-born son, in due course of inheritance have been entitled to wear the crown of Madagascar: unfortunately, however, poor Diana, my mother, although she was less depraved than are many exalted ladies, well known to fame, in every clime and country of our world, yet was not so chaste a character as the sylvan goddess, her namesake, is represented to have been. Indeed, to confess the unwelcome truth, she had been seduced into numerous *liaisons* previous to the epoch when she committed the most egregious act of folly she was guilty of in the whole course of her existence—namely, that of marrying a poor distressed man.

The Diana from whom I claim descent passed away most of her juvenile years as one of that dependent class of people said to be the peculiar favourites of Heaven. She was numbered among those whom holy writ assures us "to give to is to lend to the Lord;" that light-hearted tribe who are studiously shunned by the great, but, happily for themselves, set all the learned counsellors of the law at defiance, and triumphantly laugh at their wily tricks and quibbles; in short, Diana was a vagrant—a common beggar, who possessed neither goods nor money to serve as loaves to those insatiate sharks. Her parents, too, and their ancestors, for a century or more, had likewise been mendicants.

A beggar girl, however, when she happens to be pretty, may become an object of admiration to exalted personages of the opposite sex; and provided her cunning equals her beauty, there is no calculating to what pinnacle of grandeur the little upstart may climb her way.

To pass over the days of her early youth, about the period of her attaining her fourteenth year, my mother's charms found favour with a certain celebrated tragic actor on the London boards, who, after having given her some necessary instructions in the mysteries of his profession, kindly procured her an engagement at the theatre to which he belonged; and but from this kind of interest, it is too well known that no songstress nor actress can ever justly hope for success.

The flowery path of pleasure, laying as it now did before her, the young gipsy, for such she had recently been, frisked and wantoned so extremely to her heart's delight, that the goddess her namesake could scarce have tripped along the sylvan greensward more lightly than my parent daily tripped to and from the greenroom of the theatre at which she exhibited her fair person in performance as one of the daughters of Thalia. Unfortunately, however, although dangers are to be encountered in every state of life, none other perhaps is so replete with them to the virtue of fair woman as the life of an actress—for actresses are looked upon as fair game for every debauchee, while to the theatre it is that the most unprincipled, debauched, and heartless of them resort.

To tell the many ordeals her virtue was exposed to, and where

Diana triumphed or when she fell, I shall not attempt, as the narrative would prove too voluminous for my memoirs; besides, there are certain book-making personages in the community, who pretend to be minutely conversant with the private history and adventures of every recently-deceased person, any way remarkable for relaxity of morals, or other notoriety; and charity forbids that I should deprive one of these enterprising scribblers of the fruitful opportunity which Diana Winpenny's conduct as an actress may afford him for earning additional literary fame, as well as for gaining him more bread.

If, however, the reader of these pages should deem me remiss for not bringing to his notice more of the *faux pas* committed by my maternal parent than what I consider it necessary to touch upon, I must appeal to his philanthropy, and request of him to make allowance for the feelings of a child desirous of sparing the memory of his mother; as likewise that he will bear in mind that there may be many sons living who have substantial reasons for being actuated by the same sort of delicacy.

My mother, according to general report, when first engaged as an actress, was one of the liveliest girls ever met with; but though surrounded by flatterers (and what female that is young and beautiful can be without them), she possessed no true friend. Her situation, in regard to danger, is comparable to that of a moth, fluttering about a brilliant chandelier, lit up by a multiplicity of bright lights. She could not escape—it was impossible! A pigmy would have a better chance of success, when facing a giant in open combat, than could a lovely girl with a versatile heart and warm passions, such as my mother possessed, of escaping the innumerable snares set to entrap her; and artful depravity, backed by wealth, was perpetually at work for that purpose.

When virtue stoops to frailty, it signifies little who is the despoiler. Therefore I pretend not to say who it was that triumphed over the innocence of my maternal parent. The journalists of her day, who busied themselves in every amour and adventure in which this famed actress was engaged, less scrupulous than I am, attribute the victory over her to different persons. One gives the tragic actor who elevated her from mendicity credit for the exploit; another, and probably with greater reason, fathers the act upon a certain Protestant bishop, celebrated for his professions of sanctity; a third attributes the honour of this conquest to a tailor, who, from having bartered his own wife away to a state minister in exchange for an army contract, and afterwards his daughter for a similar remuneration, became one of the wealthiest commoners of his day; a fourth newspaper authority pronounces a Quaker, who was a great advocate for abolishing slavery and promoting marriage among the blacks, to have been the happy achiever of this triumph; a fifth unhesitatingly declares the lady's citadel of virtue was stormed by a learned judge of the Ecclesiastical Court; yet, notwithstanding these authorities, a celebrated Court journalist boldly asserts, that an

Israelite from the Stock Exchange bartered away a portion of some weighty differences received by him on a settling day in exchange for Diana's virtue.

The knowledge I have gained of the world has made me somewhat of a philosopher; and I care not which of the aforesaid reports may be the true one, or whether they are all calumniously false: yet, though I possess sufficient wisdom to know that neither the good nor the evil deeds of its parents ought to bring either honour or dishonour on their offspring, and consequently that hereditary titles are distinctions opposed to the spirit of justice and common sense, still (such is the selfishness of human nature, that) I cannot avoid deploring the misfortune I shall have to relate as having befallen my mother, because thereby I was doomed to make my appearance in the world—a poor unfriended boy, instead of being born to great honours and abundant wealth.

Having touched lightly on my mother's frailties, by referring only to newspaper accounts of them, when I might have adduced stronger matter, I shall, with the same filial tenderness towards her, avoid saying more of her amours than what is absolutely requisite, preparatory to explaining the particulars of the misfortune I have alluded to as having, most untowardly for my interest, befallen her.

Multifarious as may have been Diana's gallants, it is an assured fact, that, to gratify a bishop who supported her in great splendour, she—poor ill-advised woman!—about ten months previous to my birth, discarded the whole of them except the right reverend father himself; and the circumstance is equally well authenticated, that several months subsequent to the period of her confining her affections to this proud churchman, a prince of the blood royal of a foreign kingdom made tender overtures to her, which, by the sage bishop's advice, she accepted, and consequently became the envied mistress of this royal, and, as the fulsome journalists of the day styled him, *august* personage!

To a person unacquainted with the artifices resorted to by courtiers, it might appear almost incredible that a Protestant bishop, endowed with a revenue exceeding that of two, or perhaps three, royal princes, should voluntarily resign his favourite *chere amie* to one of that class; but he who knows anything of a court must avow that this concession is quite natural, and one which may always be expected on an advantageous occasion, such as the transfer of an expensive mistress afforded promise of being, to the proud prelate.

The bishop was a thorough trained courtier—one who, by blowing both hot and cold to fall in with the tide of favouring events, had, from being, when a stripling, a waiter at his father's tavern, risen to be a great church pluralist, when, by means of plagiarism, proved by his compilations from the writings of abler men, he got up a few political pamphlets, of a standard suitable to the talents of state ministers, who had the giving away of bishoprics and sinecures

which weigh down the nation, and by their aid contrived to step into an episcopal see; for the ladder of ambition is the less liable to slip when it has been firmly fixed in the mud. Ambition, however, is not to be contented as long as there is a higher post to be gained; consequently, my mother's *ci-devant* supporter, the bishop, by bribes and promises, now brought her over to exert all her influence with the royal prince, her paramour, to procure the promise of his influence to get him elevated to an archiepiscopal see as soon as one fell vacant.

Here again a novice in worldly affairs might fall into a mistake. He might imagine that the bishop, in his eagerness after promotion, imposed too weighty a task on his fair friend; but this novice ought to be told that our bishop did not calculate without his host; for that female influence it is which puts mitres on the majority of the bishops, while not one perhaps owes his lofty situation to his Christian humility, though many of them, from being sycophantic schoolmasters, get possession of their pastoral crooks.

Not to digress more respecting a class of men who, the sceptic says, cannot be reformed, unless by doing away with the golden temptations strewed in the state clerical gentlemen's way, it must be mentioned that all things were going on swimmingly between his royal highness the prince, the right reverend father the bishop, and little Diana, the *ci-devant* gipsy mendicant; when, alas! as mine and her ill stars ordained, she caught the small-pox, and although her life was fated to be spared, the boon was accompanied by the total loss of beauty, in place of which, to her inexpressible horror, the young actress's once lovely features were left deeply seamed by the ravages of that unsparing disease, which also rendered the pupil of one of her lately bright eyes frightfully white and quite sightless.

CHAPTER III.

" Why for her children should the wife express
More fond affection, and the husband less?
The reason, if I rightly judge, is this,
She knows them her's, and he scarce thinks them his!"

A PRINCE may be readily pardoned for entertaining a *penchant* for a pretty actress; but he would be deemed insane, were he to live with, and continue enamoured of, a one-eyed, poor, pock-marked girl. The royal personage in question was so extremely disgusted with the altered condition of his Diana, that almost immediately after her recovery from the small-pox, he broke up her establishment, without ever making her a pecuniary present, or settling on her a stipendiary allowance. This conduct from a person of royal birth may be thought extremely brutal; yet, have we not examples of such in many a *continental* prince? Besides, some allowance may be made for his highness, inasmuch as his affairs were embarrassed; but, in vindication of the bishop's barbarity nothing can be adduced. He, most unfeeling man! soon as my parent's misfortune had happened, posted away from the capital to make a visitation to his diocese; and, finding his late mistress had lost all pretension to beauty, and that he had no church preferment to hope for from her good offices, left unanswered her letters, and refused to hear the applications she strove to get made to him in her behalf.

Young and pretty actresses seldom are provident. Indeed, how is it to be supposed they can see brooding storms, when gold in profusion falls into their laps? My poor mother, in her short career of pleasure, had not only been one of the gayest of the gay, but also one of the most thoughtless of the thoughtless; the consequence of which last failing was, that within a short month from the time of her being ejected from her sumptuous dwelling, she found herself pennyless, and destitute of everything requisite for her support.

Want now overtook the unfortunate young woman, and absolute starvation stared her in the face. She not only was without a friend, but could follow no profession; for, at the theatre where she had been employed, her services were refused, and her person was regarded with scorn. She could find no alternative, and, therefore, although *enceinte*, prepared herself to resume her pristine trade of a beggar.

To be born a mendicant, and continue one through life, may not, perhaps, be a hard lot, especially when the mind accords with the lowly situation; but to rise to greatness from the condition of a beggar, and then suddenly fall back into mendicity, must be truly galling, and make the vagrant's crutch one of the weightiest that can be carried.

My poor mother, whom in these memoirs I have somewhat prematurely called Diana Winpenny, was spared the mortification of resuming her old avocation, but it was to stoop to a lot scarcely a whit better than mendicity—in short, it was to marry a poor man, one who had recently been a footman; yet, from her alliance with him, it was that she became entitled to bear the sirname of Winpenny.

Everything is judged of by comparison. I think I hear the reader commiserate the piteous lot of my hapless parent. We, however, often form a false estimate of the happiness of others; and who can pronounce that Diana Winpenny's present situation, although deprived of that treasure—her beauty, blind of an eye, and united by wedlock to a man at once ignorant and poor, was not preferable to that of a person afflicted with total blindness, loathsome scrofula, outrageous insanity, an ungovernable temper, or some other of the equally-severe afflictions, with which Providence not unfrequently visits the wealthy and the great.

The venal journalists of her day, who had hitherto shown themselves most ready to trump forth the actions of my mother, took no notice of her marriage; but, when the hymenial ceremony was over, the newly-wedded pair were permitted to retire to a cottage in Surrey, which they did, as guests, to the bridegroom's mother, a hardworking washerwoman, without having the place of their retreat, or any other circumstance regarding them, blazoned abroad in the public prints.

To abreviate this part of my story, I shall merely state, that in the aforesaid cottage I was ushered into the world, somewhere about two months after the newly-wedded couple had taken up their abode in it; and, shortly afterwards, to save my maternal parent's character from the opprobrium which would otherwise have been attached to it by our ignorant and rustic neighbours, taken to the parish church, and christened there by the names of my mother's husband.

Here again is an incontrovertible proof that all is mere chance which relates to hereditary succession. Provided my legitimate father, Andrew Winpenny, the legitimate son of Moses and Rebecca, should, by right of succession, traced from an ancient geological tree, become entitled to a principality, a dukedom, or to any other title or estate, I, Andrew Winpenny, the second, because so christened and born of the body of the wife of the aforesaid Andrew, should, although known to be no more his child than that of the Grand Mogul, indisputably succeed to all the titles and estates, to which he, the first Andrew Winpenny, could by law make good his claim. Unfortunately, however, the good villagers,

Moses and Rebecca, whom both the common and ecclesiastical law pronounces to have been my grandparents, were of very low origin; and, therefore, unless it were by an able *ruse de guerre*, there could be no hope for me of obtaining either title or estate in virtue of my descent from them.

We are all the sport of circumstances. My mother, Diana Winpenny, whose charms, perhaps, equalled those of the fairest of King Charles's favourites, and whose virtue, unquestionably, was of as exalted a character as was that of the celebrated Moll Flanders; nevertheless, unlike Barbara Villiers, Mrs. Pegg, Lucy Walters, Nell Gwynn, and the aforesaid Moll Flanders, who, all of them, saving the last adventuress, were enriched out of the national purse, and had sufficient influence to get their sons and daughters honoured by that prelude to aristocratic titles, the word Fitz placed before their names—she, poor, ill-starved woman, neither could get me so enriched, or so honoured; but, alas! was herself doomed to spend the bitter dregs of her life in miserable poverty.

Amatory swains assert that love may exist in a cottage; yet, without denying the assertion, I can take on me to say, that, where poverty is its companion, the urchin god will soon spread his wings and depart, leaving the lovers to themselves to deplore his absence, and contemplate their own folly. He did this with Andrew and Diana Winpenny, long before I had arrived at a suitable age to know he had ever been an inmate of their humble cot.

Life glides away like a shadow. Though our years are few, numerous are the wrongs heaped upon us, and the changes we are destined to undergo.

At the expiration of a few years, spent in the cottage of my nativity, I had grown to be a strong, hale youth; but in that time my grandmother's phantom of life had passed away, and she now laid deposited in her last earthly resting-place—a neighbouring churchyard. The good woman's death, however, so far from benefiting her son's affairs, proved seriously injurious to them; for she had enjoyed a small life-annuity, granted by a gentleman, with whom, report said, she had lived on very familiar terms, and which materially aided in supporting the joint-household expenses; but that source of revenue being stopped by her death, my father was put to great straits to support himself and family.

All creatures are strongly prompted by generous nature to love and provide for their offspring; yet it so happened that my father, who, by the time I had completed my fourteenth year, had three other children by his wife Diana, not only did not show that parental love and regard for me which he displayed towards my brothers and my sister, but he would often evince downright hatred, by beating and otherwise ill-treating me, without justifiable cause. Moreover, on my mother's interfering in my behalf, he would quarrel with and reproach her with the circumstance of my birth. My mother, on the other hand, who, woman-like, never could cease deploring the loss of her beauty, and that of the magnificent es-

tablishment her charms had procured for her, would frequently shed involuntary tears, on contemplating the person and miserable prospect of her first-born son, clothed as I was in mere rags; and sometimes she would exclaim, "Oh, my poor Andrew, were it not for the misfortune which deprived thy mother of her charms, thou, even thou, wouldst have been a great man—perhaps a bishop, a lord, or a prince.

Apostrophies of the kind now mentioned had better not have been made; for when the husband overheard them, they served to aggravate his anger to a pitch of fury, and not only made him more reproachful and violent to his wife, but also more tyrannical and cruel to me. Diana, however, who had never, since her marriage at least, been remarkable for the gentleness of her disposition, could ill brook these sallies of an ungovernable temper, and therefore she would retaliate in terms as reproachful as those made use of by her husband, and also valorously defend her first-born child, both by her tongue and her talons, which last were often made to leave vestiges of their sharpness on his face.

Lovers' quarrels may lead to a renewal of tender bliss; but matrimonial strife, when it has been of long duration, and between an ill-sorted pair, is of so diabolical a nature, that it should be defined as a curse, which makes a hell upon this earth for the suffering pair; and of this violent character were the quarrels which took place between Andrew Winpenny and his spouse—the once lovely Diana.

Providence is said to be just in all his ways; and providentially, the fire which burns violently seldom endures long. Shortly after I had entered into my nineteenth year, an epidemic which much prevailed in our neighbourhood released Andrew Winpenny, the senior, from a great portion of his troubles, and his wife Diana from a series of hers, by depriving her of mortal life—or, as the goodly say, "taking her to a better world," when, aided by a little assistance from the parish, the disconsolate husband contrived to give his departed wife a tolerable decent burial, in the same grave with his own mother.

CHAPTER IV.

" Wherever God erects a house of prayer,
The Devil always builds a chapel there."

" Entreat the elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, with all purity."
Wesley's Sermon on Whitfield.

WIDOWERS find favour in the eyes of the fair sex; for women know, that men who have been rivetted in the chains of Hymen have stooped to slavery; and consequently, custom being everything to man, that they are prepared for, and in most cases anxiously ready to return to, a state of vassalage.

My lawful father, Andrew Winpenny, had scarcely seen deposited his wife's body in our parent earth, ere he turned the eyes of affection upon the daughter of a neighbouring miller; and she, having passed the zenith of her charms, and being still a spinster, with no great share of beauty to recommend her in the hymenian market, was pleased to smile approbation of his love-suit. The pair now came to a proper understanding, and were shortly afterwards joined together in holy wedlock; indeed, so ready were they on the occasion, that the auspicious ceremony was performed within four months from the date of my mother's departure from this land of trouble.

My father, who had treated me with redoubled severity after my poor mother's death, behaved with a still more wanton cruelty from the day of his bringing home a second wife: in short, such was his conduct, that apparently he was determined to send my soul on the great voyage of futurity, as a companion to that of my mother, or else to drive me an outcast from his roof; while his spouse, faithful in this instance to her matrimonial vow of obedience, aided his vile efforts, not only by treating me with vixen-like fury, but also by invariably giving me a scanty allowance of food, always chosen from the very refuse of her miserable larder.

The treatment I received was not to be borne by a lad of spirit; and I, becoming thoroughly disgusted, formed the determination of flying from my father's roof. Fortune, too, the gentle dame so often abused by the ungrateful, but who not unfrequently assists man in his worst exigencies, and, Heaven knows, has done me many a good turn, smiled on this occasion, by most opportunely throwing a treasure of money in my path. The way she took of bestowing this

boon upon me was as follows:—I had been sent to a village some miles from home by my unkind mother-in-law, ostensibly to deliver a message to a cousin of hers, but in reality that she might get rid of me until a little feasting party was over, to which she had invited her parents at our cottage that day. After delivering my message, I was trudging on my road home in the dusk of the evening, tormented by a very keen appetite, with nothing in the shape of food to gratify it, when my foot chanced to strike against something which jingled at its touch, in the middle of the turnpike-road, which having picked up and examined, excessively to my delight I discovered to be a small money-bag, containing one sovereign, two half-sovereigns, and twenty-six shillings in silver.

In my rapture of joy at this lucky event, I was more than once on the eve of proclaiming my good fortune. Prudence, however, saved me from that danger, by whispering in my ear that my secret must be kept inviolate in my bosom, or my treasure would be ravished from my person. Time, however, was not to be lost, for I was apprehensive of losing my money, and most eager to enjoy ease and freedom; therefore, on the following Sunday morning, at a time when my father and all the family save myself were away from home, on a visit to my mother-in-law's parents, I most unceremoniously departed from the lowly habitation of my nativity, with my pecuniary treasure in my pocket, and a bundle containing a change of raiment in my hand; nor did I feel any boyish regret at the bold step I was taking. Worldly people usually consider *that* education to be the best for youth which conduces the most effectually to the attainment of those objects the most desired in life, and which they are destined to keep in view; and experience gleaned by me from my intercourse with mankind, since the time of my clandestinely quitting the humble cottage of my nativity, has satisfied me that no erudition, however great, can make amends for a false education; yet, as to what may be a false education I shall give no opinion, but leave that nice point to be settled by the sceptics and the learned, and content myself by observing, from my own experience, that most assuredly *diffidence and modesty* are great drawbacks to a young adventurer. For my part, I was free from those incumbrances; but ignorance furnished assurance to my character, and that too when shame would better have become me.

I was master of no learning to boast of. To write and read were the whole of my scholastic attainments. Mine, however, according to my then erroneous ideas, was not a *false* education; and that inasmuch as my father, by his own example, had taught me numerous of the little pilfering ways by means of which numerous agricultural labourers, and other people in humble life, contrive to keep their cottages supplied with good food, from the fields, farm-yards, and fish-ponds of their more wealthy neighbours, still, however, when all has been said that can be urged against him, it must in candour be avowed that my father's were only thefts suitable to his *morality* and to his name; for *Win-a-penny*, be it known, was his maxim,

fixed as that Winpenny was his name; and he would say to me, when in a jocular vein, but which was very rare, "Win your penny, my boy, honestly if you can; yet win it at any rate, and when you can."

My mother, who had witnessed the tricks of life, as they are practised, in all their intricacy, by place and pension-hunters in the higher circles, laughed at and despised the aforesaid pitiful maxim of her husband. She knew that no man could well hope to arrive at a pinnacle of grandeur, either in the church, the law, the service of arms, or as a state minister, governor-general, or ambassador, by the practice of honesty, truth, and modesty. "Andrew, my dear boy," the good woman has often said to me, "always bear in mind that he or she who would thrive in this world should be acquainted with modesty only by name, and, when necessary, must flatter, promise, and deceive, but always with due discretion. As to robbery," she would add, "the person who has gained a character for sanctity may talk largely of his honesty and conscientious scruples, while he robs, betrays confidence, and commits other impositions, wholesale and with impunity."

Poor, unfortunate Diana! grievously would she sigh and lament while counselling me in this motherly manner: doubtless the recollection of those once-favoured lovers of hers, the royal prince, the holy bishop, the contract tailor, the actor, the wealthy Jew, the Quaker, and the learned judge, together with that of their worldly maxims and conduct, rushed thronging upon her much imbittered imagination, whenever she so lectured me for my future advantage in this transitory life.

Thus ably tutored, apparently I had only to follow the maxims laid down for my guidance, that, if favoured with common luck, I might in due time become a great and a wealthy personage. How far my subsequent conduct has proved me worthy of my education, the impartial reader must be left to decide, and I trust his decision will be the result of his own sound judgment, and not shaped after the opinions of renowned and learned judges or doctors of ecclesiastical courts, who open not their mouths but to give vent to musty precedents, and who, though they thoroughly satisfy us of the character of their own education, whenever opportunity offers, by *legally* stripping us of all the goods and money we possess, and heartlessly leaving us to perish in misery and want, yet pretend to know more than others do of the exact period at which the infant mind is capable of receiving impressions, as also of the only regular habits which (as exemplified in themselves) they assert are benefits to be felt to the close of life.

Heaven be praised, I am no proctor, and never shall sit as a judge in an ecclesiastical court! Hitherto my lot in life has been to act, not to preach, and pretend to more knowledge and probity than my fellow-men. Contenting myself, therefore, with what I have stated as to my education, I shall proceed with my story.

After quitting my father's cottage, I trudged briskly along the

road for nigh two hours before I slackened my pace, when, seeing the door was temptingly open of a Methodist meeting-house, erected almost adjoining the village church, I entered the sacred building for the purpose of resting myself, while divine service was being performed. Here I may observe, that I had frequently been made to attend our parish church; not, however, that my parents were religious characters, or, indeed, at all with the approbation of my mother: for she, poor woman, having no fine clothes to appear in, had never, from the day of her marriage, gone to a place of worship. Moreover, since her intercourse with the bishop, she had imbibed the notorious Priestley's opinion, insomuch that she hesitated not to declare she hated all religious establishments, and thought them sinful and idolatrous. It was in accordance with the commands of my father that I had gone to church, as he, to procure occasional employment from our rector, to gather in or thrash his tithe corn, used to say that he must hold a candle to the devil, and verily I am inclined to think that he held the clergy to be of affinity to his Satanic majesty. In the meeting-house I had entered I was doomed to have my senses of hearing and seeing most completely astounded. Never before had I heard so impressive a discourse, or witnessed such theatrical action, as the minister treated his audience to on that occasion. At his pleasure, hell was made to yawn widely for the wicked, and the gates of Paradise were thrown off their hinges to admit the righteous; while, to increase their force on the imagination, his terrific threats and most blissful promises were accompanied by blows of the evangelical man's clenched fist, dealt with thundering force on the cushion before him. "It is a wonderful pathetic discourse, and touches the heart to the quick," I overheard several staid dames say to each other, and I make no question that they thought as they spoke: for sobs and sighs, groans and tears, with their eyes turned up towards heaven, were given by them as accompaniments to certain of the threats and promises which it seemed had occasioned the most disturbance to their tender consciences.

After the service, a subscription was entered into at the chapel-door for the family of a dissenting clergyman, who had emigrated rather than undergo the ordeal of a public trial for a nameless offence, sworn against him by the waiter at a coffee-shop, when, so strong was their disbelief of his backsliding, and so great the sympathy of the worthy congregation, stirred by the representations and entreaties of their Wesleyan minister, that they showered down their silver offerings, until the plates held out for receiving them were literally piled up with money.

About an hour after my quitting the meeting-house, as I was passing through the town of Guildford, a gentleman addressed me, saying, "My lad, hold this horse for me; I shall be back with you in less than a quarter of an hour," when, having put his steed under my care, he hurried away after a dashing young

damsel, who was walking at some little distance down an adjoining street.

I loved horse exercise, and, for a boy in my lowly situation, was rather an adept in that noble sport, having very frequently been employed by the miller, our neighbour, whose daughter my father married, to take his nags to and from a distant pasture; and now, without hesitation, or more delay than was requisite for its owner to remove himself out of sight of me, I mounted the horse, and expeditiously quitted the town, when I pushed forward, with more than the speed of a post-boy, to Farnham, a distance of ten miles. "I have had a rare pleasant ride," said I laughingly to myself, while walking the charger through the main street, to let him get cool after the journey: "riding, however, too far, I find is severe exercise, the fatigue of which would soon counterbalance the pleasure; therefore, my next stage of the journey shall be performed in some easier manner."

With me, unless the ability fails, to will a thing is to do it; and before many minutes had elapsed since my making the little soliloquy just related, I was comfortably housed, with a glass of negus and a plate of ham sandwiches before me, in the parlour of the Crown: meanwhile my horse stood unsaddled in the stable of that establishment.

"Landlord," said I, after having gained the unsuspecting man's confidence by a plausible tale, "I shall leave the horse I came here upon in your custody, until such time as the kind gentleman who lent it to me sends for it home to Guildford." The landlord, glad to have what he considered a profitable inmate for his stables, readily promised to take good care of the steed, when, having discharged his little bill, I walked away from the town, on the Winchester road, and was soon overtaken by a stage-coach, on the roof of which I procured a seat, and thus proceeded on my travels, laughing most heartily in my sleeve to think how and when the gay Lothario, its owner, would find his horse.

No hero, however proudly seated in his triumphant car, ever enjoyed more ecstatic delight than my juvenile heart rebounded with during that my first journey, travelling upon a stage-coach; but then, unlike the hero whose deeds leave him rivers of human blood to account for to his Creator, not one gout of the precious stream had I ever shed, or caused to be shed.

Pleasure such as I felt is indescribable; therefore, all I shall add on the subject is, that my situation appeared to me to be like that of a captive who had just burst his prison bars, and happily effected his escape from loathed incarceration and the power of his persecutors. Indeed, such was my exultation, and so lively was my imagination, that I repeatedly whispered to myself, "Drudge away, Andrew Winpenny, the senior, and gain your penny how and when you can: still wilt thou be a poor man; but he, the Andrew who is called thy son, without drudging at all will do his endeavours to live

more nobly by his wits, and to make his fellow-men his foot-balls."

The corporeal exertions which I had made during that, to me, most eventful and pleasant day, had fatigued my body; and I, not being one of those restless persons who lie awake in their beds, musing upon trifles, at those hours which ought to be devoted to sleep, after terminating my journey and enjoying a comfortable supper, retired to bed at the hotel the coach put up at in Winchester, to pass away, in one uninterrupted sleep, the entire night.

CHAPTER V.

"Hang sorrow, and drive away care;
The parish is bound to find us."

"Gay's doggerel lines tend to show that mirth and pauperism could be companions in olden times; the 'heaven-born minister,' too, must have been of this opinion, as, when he bribed the militia conscripts to serve in foreign fields of glory, he sent their spouses to the parish, as an honourable place of sojourn; but now that numerous poor-law commissioners, salaried with their thousands, lord it over the pauper race, nothing better is allowed for their food than oatmeal gruel, that banisher of corpulency and merriment, from the monstrous bastiles erected to uphold place and punish poverty."

My landlord was a thrifty character, who well knew how to manage with his customers; consequently, as I had no luggage for him to detain as security for the bill I owed, he took the prudent step of calling on me to discharge the little account, previous to my returning to the comforts of my pillow.

Boniface's cautious conduct had left me no account to settle with him, previous to my departure on the following morning; therefore, soon as I had quitted my bed, which was at an early hour, I hastened away from the inn, to proceed on my journey.

The morning was beautiful, and an excellent night's repose had thoroughly refreshed my limbs; therefore I proceeded on foot upon the road I purposed to travel, and felt that gaiety and joy revelling at my heart which healthy youth alone can be alive to, but all the potentates of the earth, with all their much-vaunted powers, can neither insure for themselves, nor bestow upon others.

A light heart is an excellent companion; and provided he enjoys good health and the blessing of liberty, the man who journeys through life without one is but a simpleton for his pains. Thus I have constantly thought; for I am satisfied that the proudest honours and the greatest wealth are but incumbrances to the miserable mortal who carries about with him the leaden load imposed by care. The continuance of human happiness, however, like that of all terrestrial things, is dependent on many contingencies, and not the least pressing of those is the necessity that exists of frequently satisfying man's animal appetite. On the occasion in question, my sense of hunger appealed to me so very forcibly, that after reaching the sixth mile, I gladly entered an ale-house to procure a substantial breakfast, to satisfy the ravenous wolf within me.

The facetious woman, my hostess, when putting the meal on my

table, was curiously inquisitive to know what could have brought a young fellow like me on his travels, with an hungry stomach, at that time of the morning; but I recollected the old saying, that "a still tongue makes a wise head," and suffered her not to elicit any true information from my lips; but soon as I had contented my appetite, I resumed my journey, when, after walking the distance of two or three miles, I bargained with the driver of a Portsmouth chaise-cart, and for a trifle of money got accommodated with a seat in his vehicle to that famed maritime town.

He who would be acquainted with life in an humble walk, should occasionally travel in mean habiliments, and frequent those taverns, of which there is one at least in every large English town, known as the "beggars' house." Chance, on the present occasion, conducted me to a favourite place of resort of the god Momus. It was a mean-looking dwelling; but its sign, "The Crowing Cock," which stood conspicuously placed over the entrance-door, served as a faithful augur of the unsophisticated merriment which took place withinside the dwelling. The cock, however, with all his triumphant crowing, would have been wofully misplaced, had he been stationed where he was to announce the approaching dawn; for that was a time when the visitors there were always revelling their time away in the sweet embrace of the pacific god Morpheus, and when they might defy the vigilance of Apollo, assisted by the crowing of all his cocks, to awaken them: in fine, this cock, though the emblem of triumphant crowing, served as the sign to an inn, wherein mirth and jollity reigned only when crowing cocks and the rest of the feathered tribe were at roost. To an inn which, in the day-time, was surpassed by none for the peaceful and regular conduct of its inmates, but at night was invariably made the theatre of ribaldry, feasting, and debauch; in mockery of which real scenes, probably it was, that the cock over the doorway had been shaped and moulded with his beak open.

After I had taken a glass of ale and a biscuit in the aforesaid then quiet inn, I left my bundle with the landlord, and amused myself by walking about the town and viewing its fortifications, together with the shipping lying in the harbour there. In the evening, highly delighted with what I had seen, I returned back to the Crowing Cock, where every thing was going on regular and peaceful, the same as when I had left that house. Presently, however, the shades of night began to obscure the earth, when, proportionately as the darkness became greater, distressed-looking objects flocked into the house, some of whom, to all appearance, were blind, and others lame or deformed, but all of them martyrs to sickness, or aggravated misery of one description or other.

For my part, I avow that I never possessed a redundant share of the amiable quality denominated tender-heartedness; nevertheless, on the present occasion, kindly feelings were harrowed up within my breast, at the sight afforded by so many miserable objects of my

own species; for the men and the women, the boys and the girls, were all of them, in some shape or another, most grievously afflicted.

He who judges of another by outward appearance usually is mistaken in his conclusion. The summons to a good supper, about an hour after night-fall, brought every one of the mendicants together in the common sitting-room—the apartment allotted for them to mess in. They were merry as so many grigs, and most of them freed, as if by magic, from their several sicknesses and infirmities.

It was a pleasant sight now to behold the happy set, amongst whom envy and pride—those fiend-like curses, too frequently attendant on the great—apparently were unknown. The landlord, mistaking me for one of the happy fraternity, which was most excusable, inasmuch as beggars appear in all garbs and disguises, placed a chair for me, and invited me to sit down, which I unhesitatingly did: as to a boy like me, who had never—no, not once in his life—fared sumptuously, the roasted goose, the apple-pie, the plum-pudding, the sausages, and the boiled mutton and vegetables, displayed on the board, were temptations too many and too great to be resisted: in short, at that moment of temptation, such were my feelings of friendship towards the good things I saw, that I would have risked losing all my money, and my wardrobe to boot, rather than have quitted the apartment without having first gratified my appetite with a share of them.

Professed mendicants, who travel the country for their subsistence, were it not for their intemperance, would be a very long-lifed class of people; for the lightness of their hearts, and the great exercise they take in pure air, are undeniable promoters of longevity. Excesses, however, of any kind, may kill a giant, and mendicants are notorious for those they commit. They seldom entertain scruples of conscience regarding their amours or their feasts, but thoughtlessly enjoy both to their hearts' full content: and he who imagines that the doctrine of a temperance society could convert a set of mendicants, need only to preach it to the merry-hearted crew to discover that his doctrine and his labour might as well have been given to the winds.

On the occasion I am now relating, vain would be my efforts, were I to attempt recounting one-half of the gormandizing which took place. No set of friars, revelling unseen by the eyes of laymen, could gluttonize much more voraciously than did these jovial beggars. They demolished to the last ounce of each dish on the table, and they drunk of small and of strong beer in proportion to what they ate. In fine, theirs was like an Icelandic feast, at which one article serves only as a prelude to another, until nature, wearied by repletion, is made to exclaim, over and over again, "Hold, for Heaven's sake, enough!"

With hirelings, under a monarchical government, the monarch's name is trumped forth as that of the god of their idolatry; and however weak in intellect or detested by the nation the monarch may be, his or her health, as the case may be, is invariably the standard

toast at their public messes, on the removal of the cloth. Here, however, more sincerity was used; for no sooner had the cloth disappeared from the board, and the pipes and their accompaniments been placed there in its stead, than a snowy-headed mendicant, standing up, as also did the companions around him, raised his brimming glass of punch to his lips, when he gave aloud, with peculiar emphasis, the well-known old standing toast among genuine mendicants, and quaffed off a large portion of its contents.

Smoking, drinking, story-telling, and ribaldry, were now resorted to by the party, to make time pass merrily away. The more juvenile portion of the company, however, quitted the bacchanals, to adjourn to the far end of the room, where we all of us, boys and girls alike—and I was one among the number—played many a strange prank with each other; nor is this surprising, considering that we, no, not one of us, had been tutored by fastidious masters, who, no matter how learned and precise they may be, teach that which they themselves rarely or never practise. After a rather protracted term of enjoyment that way, the fair mendicants of the adult party grew tired of drinking spirits and water, when they brought away with them from the convivial board a one-eyed fiddler, who, by-the-by, passed as totally blind in the day-time, and to the tunes extracted from his violin the youngsters soon commenced cutting capers. Let those persons who know of none more natural or better, loudly and vehemently, if they please, extol court and aristocratic balls, where pride, vanity, and affectation reign triumphant in almost every fair female's bosom; or, should they prefer such, their acclamations may be bestowed on opera dances and other public assemblies, got up expressly for the gratification of persons in high life; but, for my part, to make me truly happy, give me the mendicants' dance, when the mendicants themselves, who merrily foot it with me, have thrown aside for the night their crutches, their assumed infirmities, and all the tricking arts of their venerable trade; that, with unsophisticated mirth, and hearts buoyant as if grief had never reached them, they may be prepared to give and to receive all the delight which the happy can reciprocally share and bestow.

Yes, grant me, kind fortune, whenever I wish for it, to enjoy the sprightly dance, with all the delight I felt at the Crowing Cock; and I shall rest satisfied that enhanced bliss, derived from dancing in more refined society or to sweeter music, will never fall to my lot.

CHAPTER VI.

"*Simon.* Obediah, think'st thou that the common beggar is the meanest of his tribe?

"*Obediah.* Verily, friend Simon, I believe the proverb, 'the richer the man the greater the rogue,' applies to all the begging community."

The Honest Quakers.

THE cares of the world weigh but lightly on those favoured mendicants who have become thorough proficients in the calling. Unlike agricultural or manufacturing labourers, they rise not from their pillows at early hours of the morn, when the god of sleep most invokes them to his embrace, but revelling in his arms at some cheerful inn, they dream delightful dreams, or slumber away the time until the fumes arising from the preceding night's debauch have all been dispersed, and a comfortable hot breakfast awaits him.

The hours for business now approach, and the mendicants array themselves in their robes of office; when some of them, like fair coquets, put on their paints and patches; others, unknowingly copying after Hercules and Vulcan, take in hand their clubs or their crutches, and duly prepared for the grand business of life—the great work of imposition—they sally forth refreshed and invigorated from their several places of abode. They are all of them rogues and impostors; but arrant impostors as these vagrants are, who shall dare to say that their impositions equal those of certain empirics, who unhesitatingly poison their patients without even having ascertained their complaints? Or who could be so besotted as to compare these impositions with the grosser frauds of some men in this world who call themselves divines, and preach up as gospel what no man gifted with common sense can comprehend or believe? In short, the crutch of a beggar, when the real merits and demerits of their possessors have been examined into, ought not to be thought one-half so dishonourable as the supporters of many lordly coronets; and who is there living that, provided he knew the scales of divine justice were ready poised to weigh those things against each other, would not a hundred fold rather travel the unexplored road to eternity, answerable only for having carried a mendicant's stick, in preference to a *heathen* bishop's crook, or some of the *precious* emblems of office of certain favoured courtiers high in dignity?

To conclude this subject. Avowedly the trained beggar is a lying impostor. Let us, however, ask, whether the professor of any

other one of the trades or professions by which man acquires his subsistence is a whit better than this beggar? and, if honestly replied to, we shall be told that the craft and mystery by which all live is of a similar nature to each other; and, moreover, that the key-stone of most of the trades and professions is based on the rock of imposition.

I passed away, most happily, a great portion of another day with the light-hearted mendicants, and little Celia Selina Carolina (for beggars in low life, just the same as titled ones, love to christen their children with a variety of names), the pretty lass who had footed it away so merrily with me, having strained her ancle in the dance, or what answered the said purpose, *said* that she had done so, stayed at home with me the whole time, when she communicated many of the secrets of her profession, and resorted to a variety of coaxing arts to induce me to become one of their joyous fraternity.

With regard to fair woman, it is said, "when she deliberates she is lost;" but for a youngster, such as I then was, who had previously met with nought save wickedness from the world, it proved so tempting a thing to be tempted by all the persuasive arts of a most tempting little maiden of about my own age, that I never deliberated, but most readily agreed to every thing her winning tongue proposed to me; and, consequently, I was in almost as fair a way of becoming a professed mendicant, as any newly-appointed prime minister can be of becoming a state pauper.

In pretty Celia Selina's society the hours were made to glide most pleasantly away with me, till at length came the time for that feasting and revelry with which my associates always recompensed and consoled themselves for those rebuffs which their professional employment had exposed them to during the earlier part of the day. The mendicants were now in as good humour as on the preceding day, and the dinner was of the same substantial and excellent quality, but several of the fraternity present at yesterday's meal had taken their departure from the town to campaign elsewhere, and in their place two or three newly-arrived beggars took their seats at our social board.

It was now, just after the standing toast had been drunk, that an opportunity was afforded me for hearing the old white-headed beggar, the father of the crew, declare his sentiments regarding the poor laws of England, he having been drawn into the declaration of his opinion by one of the newly-arrived members of the community, who, it seems, had so greatly mismanaged his affairs, as to have recently been the inmate of a poor-house, wherein, according to his statement, he was restored to lost health, occasioned by excess of good living, by means of the spare diet allowed them, but which, he said, had brought him to the very verge of starvation.

"And well may it have done so," observed the hoary-headed patriarch of the gang, "for the poor laws threaten ruin to all that comes within their vortex. They are the curse of the country, and I fear will bring to pauperism even the most experienced members

of our profession. The poor laws destroy the resources of the country, and while they increase the numbers to be supported on a common fund, paralyze the industry by which the fund is reproduced and maintained. The most direct and irresistible evidence is likewise afforded of their tendency to discourage prudence or foresight—to confer a premium on profligacy and improvidence—to render economy a useless incumbrance on poverty—to annihilate all the relations of kindness and sympathy between the rich and the poor—to dissolve domestic ties among the poor themselves, and to convert our rural parishes into Indian plantations, peopled with harsh masters and with refractory slaves. In fine," concluded the hoary mendicant, "if the poor laws are much longer administered in the way they now are, the farmers must most of them become mendicants, and our trade consequently be so overstocked with members, that there will be no possibility of living by it."

"I see how it is," said a swarthy ill-looking gipsy man, who, it appeared, had recently been driven from the pursuit of his old avocation and that of his forefathers, by the prosecution and punishment he had met with, for pretending truly to tell people's fortunes, "none but your *licensed* thieves and rogues are now permitted to earn a living. A shilling serves to license any rogue as a field ranter, while a few shillings suffice to pay for the license of a hawker and pedlar, when they both of them may go at large about the world, ranting their humbug, or cheating every one they can manage to defraud with downright impunity."

"Ah, Cooper," rejoined the white-headed veteran, "so you would have your craft licensed, I see. Apparently you don't exactly approve of the law which punishes such of the enterprising part of the community, as common knaves and impostors, who pretend to fortune-telling, the use of spells, or similar mysterious feats of skill."

"Confound all such laws," exclaimed Cooper, "they have driven me to my wit's end to know what to do to obtain a good living. What think you of it, grey head, of my turning wizard?"

"It would not answer your purpose, my Norwood friend," answered the old vagrant, "for, since the laws against wizards, witches, and witchcraft have been abolished, nobody cares a doit about the crimes attributed to them; indeed, imaginary crimes require the fertile inventions of the lawyer tribe to set officious fools at work to hunt them out for punishment; otherwise, they being mere phantoms, would cease to be thought of, even among the most ignorant of the vulgar."

"The law is like a lop-sided vessel," now remarked a wooden-legged mendicant, drest in the garb of a sailor. "It leans all on one side. Look now at the corn laws, don't they force the poor and the needy to eat their bread at double the price which it ought to be, that the rich landholder may pocket one-half of the money? and are we not forced to pay twelve hundred per cent. duty on our tobacco, because that the law-makers love to grind down the poor, and to save their own purses?"

"Ah," rejoined the ancient beggar, "Jack tar has spoken the truth, the plain truth, and nothing but the truth: poverty is slavery in all countries; but here, in this land, every body knows, that to be poor is to be over-taxed, trod on, and cheated by every body, and in every way. Howsoever, as to fortune-telling, which we were talking of, it was not until lately that our betters were allowed to gull the public without fear of punishment, by predicting for money this or that luck as likely to befal their customers; while we, who foretell fortunes by the stars or the palm, are still to be punished by fine and imprisonment for our predictions. It is all gross injustice," added he, after a pause, and taking a printed paper from his pocket. After observing it had been given to him on the morning of that day, he read aloud its contents, which were as follows:—

"Phrenological Predictions.—Persons meditating any important change in their pursuit, parents, before deciding on a business or profession for their children, should consult this science, as their fortunes depend on the choice harmonizing with its predictions. Terms, five shillings and upwards.

PROFESSOR SMITHSON,
No. 90, Market Street, opposite the Swan (inner private door).

*** "The responses of the science, as far as will conduce to the future welfare of youth, are given for the same."

The mendicants passed many jokes upon the professor's advertisement, which they seemed to think a clever contrivance for imposing upon the ignorant and unwary; but the general opinion was, that the government would not long tolerate the telling of fortunes, through the agency of bumps on the skull, as, if permitted, it must serve as a licence or loop-hole for admitting all the trickery of fortune-telling into general practice.

After having terminated these remarks, Cooper, the Norwood gipsy, who apparently had been absorbed in meditation on the communication just made, rousing himself from his reverie, spoke as follows:—"It don't signify what you say, bumps or no bumps, a pretty lass may venture to tell gentlemen's fortunes. Knowledge, I know, beyond what they themselves possess, is deemed a crime by the magistrates, who scruple not to send even the learned astronomer to prison, to labour for weeks among common fellows for having cast a nativity; yet may a pretty lass venture to tell a gentleman's fortune, for where is the wretch to be found who is cold-hearted enough to inform against a pretty girl? or where is there a brute of a magistrate that would convict her?"

The mendicants were now busily at work feeling the bumps on each other's heads, and I, having first indulged myself in a sly laugh, addressed my fair young friend, by saying, in a whisper, "Celia, my dear, let us feel each other's bumps, and you shall turn fortune-teller, for none other is so fit for it."

"I agree to your proposal, provided you will accompany me about the country," said the pretty lass, when, she having smiled a sweet smile of her approbation, we spontaneously rose from our seats, to dance a merry jig to the blind man's fiddle.

CHAPTER VII.

"For many a year, in honest trade, I early toil'd and late;
Paid rent and tax—nor once refused to pay the poorhouse rate,
Till times grew bad, and trade decreased, and troubles gather'd fast,
And all my cares and ventures fail'd,—to this I came at last."

"In England, the much-vaunted land of liberty, truly deplorable hath been the seaman's lot. Thousands of the brave, but thoughtless fellows have been seized upon like felons, and punished without trial, by close imprisonment in tyrannically-governed ships; yea, kept there in twofold slavery, to toil and to fight, until killed, maimed, or worn out."

He who is habituated to early rising, finds it irksome to be slumbering in bed at late hours of the morning; and I, notwithstanding that I had footed it away most merrily on the preceding night, was up betimes, when I sallied forth from the Crowing Cock, to enjoy a walk before our breakfast was in readiness for us.

I, unpremeditatedly, bent my steps towards the harbour, when having arrived there, and while I stood leaning over a rail, looking at the shipping, in the hilarity of my heart I broke forth into the following soliloquy:—"Here am I, free as the wind blowing around me; for, happily, this is no land of slavery. I am young, and the world is to me as a luxuriant garden, abounding with delicious fruit, all ripe and ready for those who know how to gather it. My poor mother's advice shall not be thrown away upon her friendless child. He it is who will show honour to her memory, by attending to her precepts, and carving his own way to fortune. No foolish scruples nor qualms of conscience shall check his advancement; for, knowing the world to be peopled with knaves and fools, he will unscrupulously hold fast what he gets; while, by believing in the promises of none, yet administering to the vanity of all persons, he gleans more and more, until those riches are his in abundance, which, properly spread, cause all other advantages to accompany them."

"Jack, my boy, how long is it that you have been ashore," asked one of two very ill looking fellows, habited in the garb of sailors, most abruptly interrupting my soliloquy. I stared at the questioner for a brief space, thinking he had mistaken me for some other youth, and then replied to him by saying, that I had lived ashore all my lifetime, and had never been aboard ship. "The youngster has run his vessel; lay him aboard, Ned," said

one of the men, interlarding his short speech with several villanous oaths.

Not liking the appearance of things at this moment—though still I could form no conjecture of what the sailors wanted—I looked sharply about me, intending to make the best use of my legs, in taking French leave of the unmannerly rascals. I might as well, however, have spared myself the trouble I was taking, as, before I advanced half a dozen yards on my road, a severe blow from a bludgeon, inflicted on the back part of my head, brought me sprawling on the ground; when in less than two minutes I had been seized hold of and thrown headlong to the bottom of a boat, into which my brutal assailants jumped after me, and then lost no time in pulling at the oars to a vessel anchored at the outermost part of the harbour.

The rascally crimp—for such he proved to be—had inflicted rather a severe blow on my head, which bled so freely during the time we were in the boat, on our way to the tender ship—for such she was—that on my arrival on board I was nearly insensible: the surgeon, however, dressed my wound, and bandaged up my head; when I was put to rest myself in a hammock, the motion of which, combined with that of the ship, which laid at single anchor, pitching violently—for it blew fresh—made me grievously sick, when in attempting to relieve my sufferings, by getting out of the hammock, it flew from behind me, and I fell prostrate with great force on the ship's deck.

"Confound the lubber," coarsely vociferated the surgeon's mate, who had dressed my wound, and at the moment of my fall had been engaged within a few feet of me administering professional aid to an Irish patient by bleeding him, "Confound the young lubber; he has knocked the basin over, and spoilt my waistcoat." "The devil bother him," exclaimed the Hibernian; "by Jasus, doctor, but I'd sarve it out to him, if so be my arm was done bleeding, and bound up *dacently*. I say, doctor, dear—sure it has bled enough—bandage my arm—will you—that's a good *jontleman*."

This was a bad time for entreaty. The patient might as well have invoked a post, as expected of a surgeon to bandage up his arm until he had first attended to his soiled waistcoat, which he now did, aided by the boy in attendance on him, who brought soap and water for the purpose. The mischief, however, was not great, as, happily for the disciple of Galen, the apron he wore reached up to his breast, and therefore his waistcoat was very little the worse for the accident; but, as regarded the Irish patient, he, of the three sufferers of us, had the most cause for regret, for, although a robust man, he was brought to the very verge of fainting from exhaustion, before the surgeon could spare time to bandage up the vein he had opened of his arm.

After passing twenty-four hours in a state of misery, on board the tender, I, together with six or seven more impressed persons, were conveyed in a boat belonging to that vessel to the Zephyr

frigate, anchored outside of the harbour. Here somewhat more liberty was allowed to us than had been in the tender, where, it should be observed, we had been treated worse than convicted felons, pent up in a common jail.

My head was still very sore; but I was no longer sea-sick, and having a set of blunt tars about me, who were willing to enter into conversation, I consulted with one or two of them regarding what steps I ought to take to procure my liberty. They, however, soon set me right on the subject, by communicating the melancholy truth, that freedom at that time was tolerated in British sailors only when they were not wanted for his Majesty's service, and, consequently, that I could have little or no chance of regaining mine, long as the war lasted, except, indeed, I should effect my escape from the ship, or happen to lose a limb or an eye in the service of my country; in which last case, if my recommendations were good, I might be granted a pension, perhaps sufficiently large to keep life and soul together for the rest of my days. "But," observed I, in the simplicity of my heart, "I can be of no use here, for I am no sailor; nor did I ever, until yesterday, behold even the outside of a ship."

The tars laughed at my innocence, till presently one of the raffest of the crew, turning the quid in his mouth, declared that "their boatswain would soon make a sailor of me; for, d'ye see, Jack," added he, "you are young and able, but many of the lubbers the crimps sends here are old chaps, who, most of them, are stiff-legged or stiff-fingered, just as though they had been tailoring on shop-boards all their lives."

To pass over what further conversation I had with the sailors, it will suffice to say, that I now plainly discovered I had fallen into the most loathsome state of bondage that any landsman, disliking the sea service, can possibly fall into; repining, however, could be of no avail, and of this I was so sensible, that I resolved to put the best face I could on my misfortune, and to bear my captivity with fortitude. But, he who has sipped from the cup of sweets, ere it was dashed from his lips, cannot forget the sweet draught he has been deprived of; though, perhaps, had he been permitted to drain the cup to its bottom, the bitter dregs engendered there might have cured him of all desire of ever tasting of such another cup.

For my part, I regretted my separation from little Celia Selina with infinite regret, and tears involuntary started to my eyes whenever I contemplated the mendicant's highly preferable state of life to that of the impressed landsman, doomed to waste his best days in a hated ship; and yet I was sensible that I should have been reduced to a state of mendicity in a very few days, had I not have fallen into the clutches of infernal crimps.

At the time this deplorable event befel me, it so happened that my money was safe in my pocket, but then it had been reduced by one-half from what it was previous to my falling into the society of

the happy mendicants. The two days' expenses at the Crowing Cock had eased me of fifteen shillings, in addition to which I had lightened my purse by several purchases made, and the loan of five shillings, to accommodate pretty Celia Selina; but it may be observed, that she would not have needed this sum, only for the circumstance of her having sprained her ancle, and so missed the opportunity of accompanying her mother to a neighbouring fair. Still, poor as I was, I have my doubts whether there was a single sailor before the mast, belonging to the proud frigate I was on board, who could have produced even ten shillings, though that paltry sum might have been made available to procure him great advantages. Compared to my shipmates I was rich, for I had a sovereign and a shilling in my purse; but the loss of my clothes vexed me; and, as not one man out of our *free*-born crew was permitted liberty to go on shore, I got a Jew slopseller to carry a note ashore for little Celia, who promised me he would use his best endeavours to procure an answer from her, and to bring me off my clothes. However, all the satisfaction I got by this measure was that of recovering a single shirt, which, by the Jew's account, the landlord had sent me word was all he could find belonging to me; while, as to Celia, it appeared she was away on an excursion from Portsmouth, on the business of her profession, at the time when the Jew called at the Crowing Cock; therefore, my note was left there for her, but from that day to the present I have not received an answer to my epistle.

The second day after that of my embarkation we hove anchor and made sail; but as the captain carried sealed orders, not to be opened until we were in the latitude of Madeira, nobody in the ship knew to what place we were bound; consequently, innumerable were the conjectures formed on the subject, and that the more as we were victualled for a long voyage.

I now had ample opportunity afforded me for contemplating the life of a sailor, which, notwithstanding all that had been trumpeted forth in its favour, is one of unceasing drudgery. The sailor cannot call a single minute his own. Alike, day and night, he must obey the shrill notes of a boatswain's whistle; while, for the most trivial neglect of duty, or negligence of any kind, he is liable to be punished more severely than most felons are for their crimes. In short, a British sailor, though, as far as manly qualities go, inferior to no man, was at the time in question so extremely degraded, from the arbitrary nature of the naval service, that scarcely any other class of men in any country are reduced to the same lowly state of degradation.

When misfortunes overtake us, we are apt to think them worse than those by which other persons are afflicted; for, most indubitably, almost every thing in life is viewed in a wrong light—and, perhaps, no persons in life are either so happy or so unhappy as the world would make them out to be. My fate certainly appeared

hard, to have been seized upon by crimps, and doomed to be made a sailor, and banished to foreign realms, like a condemned criminal; yet, when we were employed upon long and tedious night-watches on our voyage, the landsmen on board the Zephyr, who had been victimized by crimps, related our tales to each other; and I found that my case was by no means comparable for hardships to those of many others among us—one of which, as a humane hint to administrations that encourage, or even tolerate, the infamous trade of crimping men, I will summarily record.

"Since, shipmates, you are pleased to signify a desire to be made acquainted with my story," said the relator, a man apparently verging on his fortieth year, "I have to inform you that my father was a small farmer in the neighbourhood of Brentford, and on his dying, which happened when I was in my twenty-fourth year, I succeeded to the tenantry of his farm; and about a year afterwards, wanting a helpmate, I married an amiable young woman, who made me an excellent wife, by whom I have six children now living.

"My father left little wealth behind him, and my wife brought me none; but, for a time after our union, our joint frugality and industry made our affairs go on swimmingly—insomuch that we were getting before the world, for we had spare money in store.

"The sun of prosperity does not always shine. An increasing family—the galling pressure of tithes—and almost year after year a change of times for the worse, gradually altered our condition; till, at length, though we fared harder than our labourers, we could no longer make both ends meet. When we were in this woful state, often have I been compelled to part with implements of husbandry and articles of household furniture, to enable me to pay exorbitant poor-rates, to support the idle and the worthless, who fared better than myself.

"But," shipmates, resumed the broken-down farmer, after having wiped away a tear or two from his care-worn face, "not to harrow my own feelings, or tire your patience by an unnecessarily long tale, I shall pass over the minute relation of our misery, and leave you to judge how it must have been increased, year after year, from the time when I had a good, well-stocked farm, to that of my possessing no article worth a single shilling. When my family were reduced to a state of utter destitution, I was taken into custody by a writ from the court of request, and carried to White-cross-street prison, in London, for a debt of one shilling and sixpence."—(Here several dreadful oaths from the lips of his warm-hearted hearers interrupted the *ci-devant* farmer in his story.)—After which, and his having listened to some commiserating remarks, the honest man resumed as follows:—

"I thought my case was a very cruel one; but when I had been afforded time to look around me at my companions in the prison, my sentiments underwent an entire change—for, I and my

family, d'ye see, messmates, are all of us young and hearty, and strong enough to earn our bread by our labour, while, incredible though it may seem to you, there were now pointed out to me three wretched debtors, whose united ages amounted to two hundred and twenty years, and who were lingering their last days away in squalid misery, just removed from starvation, for debts, which, summed up together, amount to only four shillings and tenpence!

"But this is not all. I could freeze your very hearts with horror at the relation of what passes in that loathsome gaol. One poor father of a large family I saw brought there for a debt of fivepence; he, however, was released from his troubles, for he died of apoplexy shortly after his being brought to the prison for incarceration; but what became of his starving family Heaven only knows.

"In my behalf fortune again smiled, for an old friend came forward to liberate me from prison; but law and poverty had forced me to move from one place to another, and I had been apprehended in rather a distant part of the country; consequently, the expenses of my arrest, though I had been taken for only one shilling and sixpence, were made by the law's chicanery to amount to fifty pounds—all which large sum my friend paid: yet, generous and kind-hearted as this most excellent man is, he protested against the hardship of his being made to pay so dearly for *justice* administered against a poor man, when against a rich one in England, he said, *justice* could never be made to act; as a proof of which bold assertion, my dear friend adduced the circumstance of his having recently lost upwards of a hundred pounds by a lawyer, who had himself pocketed two hundred thousand pounds belonging to his clients, and then laughed at these dupes of his, and threatened one of them with a prosecution for daring to cast an imputation on *his character*. Thus, my friend said, the boasted laws of Britain had not only left this wholesale rogue unpunished, but had even tolerated his proceedings; while, moreover, that in genteel society he had become a great favourite, as a natural consequence of his increased wealth."

Several loud ejaculations, indicative of indignation at this part of his narrative, almost stopped the unfortunate man in his story; however, he perseveringly concluded by saying, "that his friend had sent him to Portsmouth, to negotiate for the passage of himself and his family to Canada, in a ship on the eve of sailing—which passage-money his friend had intended to pay, as also to give him a sum to enable him to begin a new career in the world—but that, the morning after his arrival at Portsmouth, having left his family in bed at the inn where he had put up, he himself went to the harbour to make some necessary inquiries; when there, his person had been seized upon by a gang of crimps, who conveyed him on board the tender, from whence he had been removed to the Zephyr

frigate, to be made serve the King, while his poor wife and children were left pennyless, to struggle in an unfeeling world against misery and starvation; or, in accordance with his own words—to become "parish paupers."

Unfortunate man! Miserable as may have been the predestined fate of his helpless wife and children, how much more threatening would have been their situation, had the Poor Law of a subsequent period been in operation!

CHAPTER VIII.

"He was of that noble trade
That demi-gods and heroes made,
Slaughter and knocking on the head,
The trade to which they all were bred;
And is, like others, glorious when
'Tis great and large, but base, if mean."

THE reading portion of the community have long had their patience put to a severe ordeal, by the monotonous stories related by voyagers of their doings, seeings, and sayings on board a ship; and this, notwithstanding that a ship, after all has been urged that sophistry can invent in its behalf, is most indubitably the very worst prison that man can be incarcerated in.

The worst company, the most abominable accommodation, the smallest possible comfort, and the greatest personal danger, may justly be enumerated in the long list of grievances which the impressed landsman has to complain of when he is compelled to serve on board a ship. In fine, such is his miserable situation, that he would inevitably destroy himself had he sufficient time left at his disposal to reflect upon it: his persecutors, however, apparently sensible of this, leave him no leisure time for thought, but almost unceasingly harass the poor wretch, driving him to and fro, aloft and below deck, and forward and aft, as though he were an animal of a meaner nature—a dog or a monkey, to come and go at the bidding of any jack in office, shaped in the shape of a man.

Knowing, therefore, as I do by experience, what is the life of an impressed landsman, when serving on board a king's ship, I shall weary no reader's patience by detailing any particulars relating to it, but pass on to other matter, after briefly observing, that all the inventive faculties of mankind for torturing the innocent of his own species must have been strained to their full stretch, when a worthless administration, paid and employed to do justice to every body, yet devised and enforced the means of supporting their nation's grandeur, by torturing their fellow-men in the frightful way that impressed landsmen are tortured;—indeed, no class of priests, in the pomposity of their pride, have ventured to foretel any punishment comparable to it for barbarity, as the lot of the wicked who deviate from their creed, in the state of futurity.

Our sealed orders, when they were opened off Madeira, were

found to contain instructions for the commander of the Zephyr to proceed with her to the West India station, and we arrived in the Caribbean Sea within five weeks from that time, and two days afterwards anchored in the harbour of Port Royal, in Martinique.

The season was sickly at that time, and the yellow fever raged to a frightful excess; while we, as new comers, soon were made dreadful sufferers from its violence. Forty of our crew died within a fortnight from the day of our arrival, and among them was the poor farmer, whose story is related in the last chapter, as also another of the pressed landsmen, who had been shipped from the tender about the time I was. My youth and spare habit of body were circumstances in my favour, and I had the good fortune to escape a visitation from the then prevailing scourge of the western tropic; but a seven weeks' confinement to a ship, with salt provision, bad rum, and filthy water for my daily ration, had by no means reconciled me to the miseries attendant on a sea life; therefore, I was continually upon the watch for a favourable opportunity of effecting my escape from the Zephyr frigate.

The discipline carried on in the British navy was at that time extremely severe, and deserters from it, no matter whether they had been pressed into the service, or that they had entered into it voluntarily, could expect to be shown no mercy when they had the misfortune to be retaken. Of this last mentioned fact I was very sensible, and I also well knew that it would be a futile task to attempt hiding myself anywhere in the island of Martinique.

This beautiful island at that time belonged to Great Britain, but the French settlers dared not to harbour or conceal deserters from the British service, either of the army or the navy, for great was the penalty attached to this offence. For the same cause no ship captain would take any person from the island, unless he had a permit from the government there.

We had been in harbour about a month, when a Spanish brig of war, from Porto Rico, which had been caught at sea in a hurricane while cruising in our neighbourhood, entered the harbour of Port Royal, as we were taught to believe, to procure shelter.

There is a favouring time for all things, and I was now doomed to discover that resolution and perseverance may triumph over great difficulties. One of the lieutenants belonging to the Spanish vessel was an Englishman, and it so happened that, from being on shore in attendance on our captain, who on the death of his personal serving man had taken me into his service, as he said, on account of my cheerfulness and activity, I contrived, by means of little services rendered at a coffee-house to him, to scrape an acquaintance with this officer, who, it should be mentioned, lodged only a door or two from my captain's quarters.

The officer in question appeared to me a man after my own heart; his lofty spirit commanded respect from every one, while his easy manners gained the goodwill of many; but I subsequently found that he was a man whose education would have done honour

to a Spartan of olden times. No scruples of conscience disturbed his breast. When it could be achieved with safety, this extraordinary personage would unscrupulously have robbed from the church or the chapel of any religious class of the great community of the world. He would have taken away its plate, its valuable shrines, or its wine, but disregarded the sacred wafers; and when the act had been achieved, he would have gloried in his robbery, and turned his booty to the best account.

After a growing intimacy of some days, I thought I had delved into the character of this remarkable lieutenant, and that, I could bring him into the humour of furthering my views. Accordingly I ventured to open my heart to him, by confiding to him the tale of my grievances, and hinting at my eagerness to effect my escape from servitude in the British frigate.

I was correct in my conjecture, and my confidence was not misplaced; while, to prove the force of opinion, I avow, that from that day forward I have thought the better of myself for the just estimate which I then formed of this intrepid man.

"My boy," said he, after having mused over certain parts of my tale, but assuming, as he spoke, the manner of a man not to be played with, "those who mean to deceive always have recourse to oaths, but your little pranks satisfy me that you are worthy of being served; therefore I shall at once tell you what to do, that you may regain your freedom, and you, youngster, in return, must tell me as candidly whether you dare to perform what I propose."

The gallant officer now communicated, as a secret, that his ship was to depart at midnight, and told me he would furnish me with a sleeping draught, to be put into my captain's grog that evening, when all I should have to do, he said, would be, after dosing his allowance, to possess myself of what valuables the captain had on shore with him, and then hasten to an appointed spot at the water's edge, where he himself and a boat's crew would be in waiting to take me off in their boat to the Santa Maria, whose anchor would then be apeak, and the canvass of her courses lying loosened from her yards.

The prospect now held out to me of escape from the man-of-war filled my heart with joy, and I was warm in expressions of my thanks to the lieutenant for his generous offer, though inwardly resolved not to commit the robbery he had made a condition of our agreement; for, Jesuit like, I was willing to take all the good I could procure for myself, and to shirk all the evil. Consequently, for the sake of escaping, I readily agreed to the terms proposed by him; when the preliminaries having been arranged, every thing else was speedily settled between us, for the lieutenant was not so much a man of words as of deeds.

My captain, who lived in perpetual dread of a visitation of the yellow fever, which had carried off so many of his crew, led a very recluse regular life on shore, and kept early hours; and I, having

duly received the promised sleeping draught, administered it to him in his last cup of the night, which, by-the-by, happened to be one containing medicine, and therefore in that nauseous mixture the new ingredient was not discernible. The effect, however, proved admirable, as the patient was thrown into a sound sleep almost before he could get housed in his bed.

Having satisfied myself of the naval captain's condition, I locked the door of his chamber upon him, and, with the key in my possession, took a hasty departure from the lodging-house to attend with punctuality to my appointment.

I found the brave lieutenant waiting for me on the beach smoking a cigar, and pacing backwards and forwards opposite to his boat, which lay, ready manned, a short distance out at sea. Having gently hailed me in the dark, and ascertained who I was, he addressed me by saying, "Well, boy, all's right, I see, for here you are; but say, what booty have you brought from the king's officer?"

"Noble sir," replied I, "I gave the captain his dose, which set him asleep, but ere I could do more, I was disturbed by some one approaching the chamber, which made me glad to escape without ransacking his locker;—indeed, I fear I am now being pursued."

"You are a swab and a lubber; I thought better of you," exclaimed the lieutenant, swearing several bitter oaths. "Howsoever, you may stay behind and be ——— to you."

At this declaration I most earnestly entreated of the lieutenant to take me away with him, saying I should be flogged to death if he left me to the captain's mercy.

The lieutenant listened to me with more patience than I expected he would have shown, and then, after a pause of some duration, which filled my mind with painful apprehension, he added, "Well, youngster, though I suspect you are not of the value of a pinch of oakum, I shall overlook your neglect of duty in not having pillaged the naval captain, and I will take you off with me."

I warmly thanked the brave man for his kindness to me, and he, after smoking a few whiffs of his cigar, said, "The wind's fair, and with spread canvass we shall walk over the wide waters in a giffy;" and then, in the Spanish tongue, he hailed his boat, which instantly put to land, and we were seated in her, and she was bending her way to the brig almost immediately.

"Keep a still tongue in your head, as you value a whole skin," said the lieutenant to me, while the boat was being rowed to the brig; "as, d'ye see, lad, we have queer hands aboard, who think no more of skinning a living Protestant than bleeding a pig."

"By the shade of my mother," thought I, "I have stepped out of the frying-pan into the fire. Here's a pretty business I have made of it; my life lying at the mercy of the merciless."

My sensations at this time were anything but pleasant, yet in ten minutes we were alongside the brig, when I saw additional and stronger grounds than heretofore for stirring my ears. Half-a-

dozen ferocious half-naked blacks, armed with a brace of pistols and a cutlass each, stood in the ship's gangway to receive us on board, meanwhile a number of Creole Spaniards were assembled on the after-deck, engaged in noisy conversation; while bustling blacks, intermixed with men of colour of all castes, thronged the waist and the fore-part of the vessel.

I knew not one word of what was said, but the truly savage appearance of the ship's crew might have appalled the heart of a stout man in my situation, and I scruple not to avow that I involuntarily shuddered as I hastily contemplated the busy scene around me; and I would have thought myself happy to have been once more in safety on board the Zephyr, even though doomed to receive a severe punishment for the offences I had committed against naval discipline.

The lieutenant of my acquaintance, whom for the first time I now heard called by the name of Jones, having exchanged a few words in conversation with his captain, in which, I presume, he made his report of the duty he had transacted at Martinique, called me into the presence of that commander, who, however, took no particular notice of me, but employed himself in issuing orders; upon which all became bustle in the ship, till presently she was under weigh, gliding rapidly through the water with her stern to the shore.

My friend the lieutenant now told me there was a hammock ready for me, and bid me descend from the deck, under the guidance of a flat-nosed black fellow, whom he pointed out, saying he was a gunner's mate, who would be my messmate and look after me.

Accordingly, as this was no fit time for idle talk, and I was not altogether at my ease respecting Lieutenant Jones's conduct, I followed after the black in silence, till he stopped between decks, and made signs to me to signify which hammock I was to turn into. This too I presently did, though I felt myself extremely disgusted with my berth, the bedding of which was still warm from the perspiration of some person who could not have risen many minutes from it; while, from the peculiar oily odour arising from the bedding, and which wellnigh poisoned my nostrils, I felt convinced that the individual in question could be no other than a glossy-skinned black.

The favoured child of fortune, who is daily pampered with delicacies, and has a heart quite at ease, may be as fastidiously nice as he pleases in the quality of his bedding, but the less favoured mortal, who happens to be situated in such a way as I was on this untoward occasion, even the most delicate lady might readily pardon for submitting in silence to occupy the sleeping quarters allotted to him. Besides, while I lay tumbling and tossing my body about in my loathsome bed, perspiring like a sunflower from the effects of intolerable heat, always inevitable in low situations within the tropics, but almost suffocating where I was, from the confined air between decks of our crowded ship; and also feeling myself, as I did, within

an ace of being poisoned by the horrid stench bequeathed to me by my predecessor, I could not fail reflecting upon the lieutenant's advice, whereby he had cautioned me to keep a still tongue in my head, that I might be spared from becoming the victim of a crew who thought no more of skinning a living Protestant than of bleeding a pig.

In the midst of astounding difficulties, when I get a little habituated to them, somehow I always find my courageous spirit rise with the occasion; and now, while I lay in the black man's hammock, perspiring almost to death, ironically I whispered to myself, "Truly I am in comfortable quarters, no one ever had a warmer berth;" when, soon as I had soliloquized in this way, I felt more mastery over myself, and shortly afterwards fell into a profound sleep.

CHAPTER IX.

"A sail! a sail! a promised prize to Hope!
Her nation---flag---how speaks the telescope?
They own the signal, answer to the hail,
Hoist out the boat at once, and slacken sail."

A NEW day had scarcely dawned on the luxuriant islands of the West Indies, when an uncommon bustle on the ship's deck awoke me from sleep to a painful sense of my condition. The watch below were now turning out of their hammocks; for all hands had been piped upon deck, and my new messmate, the gunner's mate, not having observed that I was already awake, gave me a rude tweak by the nose, as a preliminary step to his signifying to me that my presence was required above. I obeyed the ungenteel summons with alacrity, and in a trice was among the bustling crowd upon deck; yet, before I could get there, a shotted cannon, fired from just over my head, startled me not a little, at the same time that it filled my mind with conjectures, intermixed with apprehensions, that the Zephyr was paying us an unwelcome visit.

Every man of the crew was now at his quarters; but having had no particular station allotted to me, I kept beside my messmate, the gunner's mate, whose post was at a long brass twelve-pounder, the sternmost gun on the larboard side of the brig. However, I had not been here many minutes before Lieutenant Jones ordered me aloft into the mizen-top, and from thence I had a fine view afforded me of the passing scene.

A strange sail, evidently a large vessel, was in sight, and her appearance had occasioned our captain to pipe all hands upon deck, and to send every man of the crew to his quarters. When we neared upon her, it was discovered that she was not a ship of war, yet, in defiance of our signals to her to bear down to leeward of us, she continued steering a course away from the Santa Maria, with all her canvass spread to the wind. Another and yet another gun was fired, but still she changed not her course, although we gained fast upon her. At length, having come within half-gun range of the stranger, we fired a shot right over her, which passed through her mizen-staysail, when her commander, no longer daring to resist our pleasure, backed his mainsail, and we passed close to windward of him. Through a speaking-trumpet he was now hailed by our captain, in the Spanish tongue, to which his reply was in English. Lieutenant Jones next hailed him, asking what ship it was, where

he was bound to, and in what consisted the cargo. "The Stately, from London, bound to Jamaica, with plantation stores," was the reply, given in a hoarse, rough voice.

Men who best know their own species are always suspicious of, and rarely confide in, the word of others, when better security can be obtained. We now manned a boat, in which Lieutenant Jones proceeded on board the Stately; and after a lapse of twenty minutes our boat returned back to the Santa Maria, followed by one belonging to the Stately, rowed by two sailors, and bearing in her the ship's commander and one of his passengers.

On his mounting to our deck, the merchant captain looked around him with fearful surprise, caused by beholding our warlike appearance and formidable crew, who were most of them drawn up two deep in the gangway, each individual armed with a brace of pistols stuck in a waist-belt, and a sabre suspended from his thigh. The brass cannon, too, of which we had eighteen pieces mounted upon deck, were ready run out, and a gunner stood to each with a lit match.

The knowledge he had of mankind, which made our dreaded commander dubious of the veracity of Captain Edgar, now prompted him to order me down from the mizen-top, that I might be present to hear what the merchant skipper and Lieutenant Jones said to each other; for though he knew I could not be catechised on the subject by any individual on board, save Jones himself, yet he bore in mind, that when he next put into port he could employ some person to question me, and thus ascertain whether his lieutenant had in any way deceived him. Accordingly, Captain Edgar, in my presence, and before all the superior officers of the brig, was now interrogated by Lieutenant Jones on all points regarding his vessel, and also made to produce his bill of lading and ship's papers of every sort, which documents were attentively looked at by our captain, although he could not make out a word of their meaning.

At length, after much questioning, and a severe lecture given him for not having laid-to immediately he had been signalled from our ship of war, the merchant captain was dismissed by our commander, and allowed to return to his vessel; not, however, without receiving a caution that, as he valued his future safety, he was on no account to let it transpire in Jamaica that he had been boarded in the Caribbean Sea by a foreign ship of war; but as to our brig's name, it was not permitted to any one on board us to make it known to him.

The mercy that our commander had thus shown to Captain Edgar, by not having captured his vessel, and made prisoners of every soul on board of her, I acknowledge, considering what I had seen of the crew of the Santa Maria, extremely astonished me. Our captain, however, had cogent reasons for showing this great lenity, inasmuch as a West Indiaman, though a large and good ship, was not worth his capturing, when freighted, as the Stately was, with nought save plantation stores. Had he captured her, it might have brought a

British cruiser in search of him, and, consequently, occasioned the loss of his war-brig in return for the worthless prize; or, under any circumstances, the ill-timed capture must have compelled him to quit his present cruising-ground. "You ought to consider yourselves highly favoured by fortune to have escaped uninjured from a set of barbarians, who think no more of skinning living Protestants than of slaughtering so many pigs," thought I, when looking at Edgar and his companions, while their boat was passing over the rough ocean under our stern, on her way back to the Stately. Presently, however, the frail little boat was alongside that ship, when soon I saw it hoisted astern of her, and the merchantman making all the sail she could to get at a safe distance from the Santa Maria.

From not understanding anything of the Spanish language, I could only guess at the sentiments of our crew with regard to the Stately having been allowed to depart from us without overhauling her, and in safety; yet, assuredly, if a true judgment could be formed from the gestures and manners of our people, I should take on me to pronounce that the desperate band felt disappointed and angry on the occasion.

The business of subordinate heroes is to blindly obey orders, and not to reflect upon their nature, or presume to question them; consequently, stir and bustle are great promoters of discipline among organized bodies of men, and, to judge by his conduct, our commander was perfectly well acquainted with this truth. To use a vulgar adage, he was one of those persons who look before they leap; and I saw his keen eyes busily employed, reading, as it were, into the sentiments of his people, before he issued his orders to them, or in any manner disturbed their cogitations on the subject of the merchantman's departure. This brave commander's general policy, as I afterwards found, was to balance parties against each other, and employ spies in the councils of every faction.

Our brig was all this time lying to, with her mainsail aback, yet making some headway before the trade wind, which blew at the rate of five knots an hour. Till now, Captain Quirorga, for this was our commander's name, issued his orders through a speaking-trumpet, when in five minutes our yards had been braced round, and the ship's sails were filled from the larboard quarter, bearing us along at a steady rate, upon a new course.

All the crew, except the watch, which constituted one-third, were now permitted to retire below to their quarters; and my friend the black gunner unceremoniously introduced me to the rest of our messmates, when, from the top of an arm-chest, we soon demolished our breakfast, which consisted of yams, biscuits, and coffee. To use a maritime term, I was now most completely out in my reckoning; for I neither knew where we were bound to, nor could understand the language of any individual on board the Santa Maria, save only Lieutenant Jones, and he had not deigned to speak to me since our embarkation, except to give orders, and that before every one.

Difficulties and dangers often serve to infuse energy into a youthful character, and have a tendency to form a man, of all others, the fittest to brave the storms of life, and to rise superior to the machinations of envious rivals and open foes. Seeing the difficulties of my situation, as I now viewed them, I resolved to make it a rule with me through life, to study, as much as I could, the language, customs, and leading peculiarities of character of those persons with whom I associated; and, in accordance with this determination, I now set myself to work in picking up what words I could of the Spanish language.

On the second morning after our falling in with the Stately, we made land, and towards evening came to an anchor off an island which I have since learnt was Santa Cruz, at that time the seat of government of the Danish commander-in-chief and governor in the West Indies. Next morning, before the day dawned, we hove anchor and made sail from this picturesque island; when, after a chase of some hours, thanks to our superior sailing, we came up with a strange-looking, lugger-built vessel, painted black from stem to stern, which had passed in sight of our anchorage-ground the preceding evening, and in search of which doubtless it was that we had hove anchor and made sail at the early hour we did.

On nearing this vessel, we discovered she had a thronged crowd of people on board, and that they were in a state of no small confusion. The intention of her crew seemed to be that of running her ashore, anywhere they could, on the island of Porto Rico; for they kept steering their lugger steadily on the same course, with all her canvass set, direct for the land there. However, at length the fears of her crew apparently had been exchanged for the feelings of satisfaction, as all at once, and before it had become necessary to resign the hope of successfully running their vessel ashore, her crew, at having made out some signal of ours, suddenly put her about, when, under easy sail, she came majestically over the waters towards us.

Presently the Santa Maria and the slaver, for such this last vessel proved to be, were nearly alongside of each other, when a few words having been exchanged, through their speaking-trumpets, between her commander and ours, a boat was lowered from our stern, and while the vessels laid to, Lieutenant Jones and a boat's crew, of which, by the captain's order, I made one, paid a visit to the Guineaman. To a person unaccustomed as I was to such a sight, the thronged deck of a slaver, with a full cargo of Africans on board, could not be otherwise than distressing. The suffering wretches here were chained together by pairs, and so many in number that they crowded every plank, save alone at the officers' quarters, the aftermost part of the lugger's deck; yet half the live cargo were at that time below, secured under hatches.

I could know nothing of the conversation which took place between Lieutenant Jones and the commander of the Guineaman, but that it must have been an amicable one admits of no question, as, on parting, the two officers shook each other's hands with great

cordiality; and, moreover, the slaver's captain sent a basket of things of African produce in our boat, as a present to Captain Quirorga.

"Andrew," said Lieutenant Jones to me, as I sat beside him, on our way back to the Santa Maria, "see what those canting Methodists and superlative knaves of Quakers of our misgoverned country have done, for the sake of ruining the British colonists, because they themselves have no property in the colonies. By getting the oppressively-taxed, half-starving people at home to sign petitions against slavery, they have stirred the British slaves to rebellion, and procured their own nation to be a party against the masters; nor will they cease stirring discord, until the lucrative colonies in this quarter have become the property of the well-governed United States of America. Gold is the Moloch of those people, and they themselves have embarked a great portion of their capital in slave-ships, which, of course, are all of them foreign vessels, ostensibly the property of foreigners."

I neither knew nor cared anything concerning the mal-administration of West India affairs, and it mattered not to me whether Methodists or Quakers openly or under-handedly monopolized the slave-trade, which the British Government had abolished many years before; consequently, I attempted making no reply to the lieutenant; but, several hours after we had rejoined our brig, the slaver and the Santa Maria were snugly anchored in the harbour of Saint Juan, at Porto Rico, in berths convenient to each other.

CHAPTER X.

"A crowd of shivering slaves of every nation,
And age and sex, were in the market ranged:
Each bevy with the merchant in his station:
Poor creatures! their good looks were sadly changed."

"Methinks, at meals some odd thoughts might intrude,
And conscience ask a curious sort of question,
About the right divine, how far we should
Sell flesh and blood."

CAPTAIN QUIRORGA and the captain of the slaver proceeded on shore together as soon as their vessels were safely anchored; and shortly after daylight next morning an order arrived from our captain, for Lieutenant Jones to proceed on shore, and take me along with him. Accordingly we went on shore together to our commander's residence, but the cautious lieutenant, conjecturing from the order he had received that his captain was resolved to have me present, as a check upon him when the English language was used, wisely made a merit of necessity by communicating to me some little secrets regarding the commanders of the two vessels, and the nature of the service they were engaged in—so that I might fully understand how I was to act, to avoid in any way betraying or injuring him with his commander.

By the secrets alluded to, I was given to understand that the slaver, though she was known in the Spanish trade as the Santissima Trinidada, was in reality no other than the celebrated vessel the Saucy Jack; and that, although ostensibly the property of a Captain Robertson, of Porto Rico, she absolutely belonged to some wealthy members of the Society of Friends, who resided in a certain great metropolis, and who, from the gains realized from three successful voyages made by this lucky vessel from the coast of Guinea, had already more than tripled the capital embarked by them in this most lucrative speculation.

Captain Robertson, it appeared, was the managing man of all the concerns which these conscientious Quakers carried on between the West Indies and the coast of Guinea; consequently he was well known, and in great credit at Porto Rico as a general merchant. He always remained there, when the luggar was away under Span-

ish colours; but whenever she makes a trip to any of the neighbouring islands, which, the better to disguise the nefarious business she was kept for, usually was done with her once between each voyage of hers to the coast of Guinea, then Captain Robertson invariably went commander of her, but with a different crew, and the Saucy Jack's papers.

By Lieutenant Jones's discourse, it further appeared that Captain Robertson was a zealous partisan of, and correspondent with, the Anti-Slavery Society, and that, assisted by a brother-in-law of his, who was a missionary and a famous Methodist parson, employed in Jamaica, he had been a great instrument, according to the cant of the society itself, in converting whole gangs of Negroes to the blessings of Christianity; or, in plain language, he had stirred them up to commit bloodshed and rebellion, while entailing on themselves and their posterity misery and starvation.

The preceding information having been communicated to me, together with some confidential cautions respecting how I was to conduct myself in the presence of our much-dreaded captain, the lieutenant, to secure me in his interest, just as we were landing, presented me with a dollar, telling me it would more than suffice to defray what expenses I might incur on shore.

We proceeded to our captain's lodgings, where we found him closeted with the commander of the slaver, and a puritanical-looking man, remarkable for an abundance of red hair, whom I soon discovered was the celebrated Captain Robertson. This famous man, it seems, had not been able to master the Spanish language sufficiently to converse in it on business; therefore Lieutenant Jones had to interpret between our commander and the alternate captains of the lugger. The Spanish captain of the slaver commenced the conference, by the production of his ship's papers, whereby was shown the number of slaves he had brought with him into Porto Rico, how many he had lost by death, and what the cargo and expenses of the voyage stood them in in hard dollars.

The accounts having been examined, and explained to the satisfaction of Captains Quirorga and Robertson—for, to my surprise, I found that my commander possessed an interest in the lucrative concern—directions were given by Robertson that the slaves, who were at that time undergoing the process of being cleansed for the express purpose, should be landed as soon as practicable, and taken to the slave-market.

The Spanish captain of the slaver departed to visit his lugger, and the remaining three gentlemen sat down to breakfast; meanwhile the mistress of the lodging-house, Mademoiselle Delisle, as she was called, though a woman with half-a-dozen of her own children about her, took me under her maternal care, and gave me a most delicious breakfast, as a part of which were several sorts of tropical fruits—one of them the rich pear, named the aracado, which is highly esteemed, and eaten with salt meat.

Mademoiselle Delisle, both at and after our breakfast, seemed to regard me as an unfortunate youth, in whose welfare she felt interested; but all attempts at conversation between us proved unavailing, therefore, what could be the kind-hearted female's motive for feeling concerned on my behalf I could not possibly conjecture. When we had idled away an hour or more at breakfast, a sailor came to the lodging-house, to notify to the gentlemen above stairs that their presence was called for in the market, as the slaves had all been disembarked from the Santissima Trinidada. The trio of enterprising heroes, on receiving this summons, sallied forth to visit the slave-market, and I, of course, followed at their heels, when, such was the sight I witnessed, that I feel assured I shall never forget it on this side of the grave.

The squalid, emaciated, half-famished Negroes, just landed from the slaver, were bound together with cords, by pairs, in the market-place—men and women, boys and girls, having been carefully lotted, according to their size, age, and sex; and, in most cases, in accordance with their shades of colour, which are greater than a European, who has not visited the slave colonies, or the slave-market anywhere, where Africans are bought and sold, can well have an idea of. For my part, although I had been aboard the Santissima Trinidada, and witnessed the crowded condition of her decks, yet I could not but feel astonished at counting five hundred and forty newly-imported slaves drawn up in the market, to think how it could have been possible for so great a number to have been stowed away, much less to have continued in a state of existence, on board so small a vessel as was this slave lugger. My astonishment, however, was afterwards augmented, on finding she had sailed from the river Gambia with seven hundred on board, one hundred and sixty of whom had died during the month of most dreadful incarceration in their infernal prison, where the space allotted to each for sleeping room was materially less than what a dead human body is pent in when coffined.

Before the abolition of the slave-trade by the British Government, and until the time when it employed its ships of war cruising to make prizes of the freighted slave-vessels of other nations, and out of the pockets of its home tax-payers paid the seamen head-money for the slaves so captured by them, the traffic of slavery, as related to conveying the slaves from Africa, was carried on in a far more humane manner than it has been since that period; for, formerly, respectable merchants were the traders; and, inasmuch as security is the foundation of property, they took especial good care, for their own sakes, as well as from principles of humanity, not to crowd their vessels too full of slaves. Now, a set of unprincipled, desperate adventurers, who, nevertheless, are many of them men of great affected sanctity, carry on this traffic; and to make the gain more than commensurate with the risk, the hard-hearted race crowd their vessels almost to suffocation, in a way at which hu-

manity is made to shudder. However, when we take into consideration the great encouragement held out for illicitly carrying on this trade, as, for example, that the crews of war ships find it is their interest never to fall in with an *empty* slaver, and therefore purposely leave a certain latitude free for them; and also that the governors of Spanish islands give every encouragement and protection in their power to those who embark capital in slaves and slave-ships, how is it to be wondered at that this branch of commerce should be a most thriving one? In truth, the temptations for embarking money in this way are so great, that they must be irresistible to unprincipled, avaricious men. The great glut of prisoners made in African warfare—the royal mode in practice there of selling subjects, in place of extracting wealth from them by taxation—and the almost innumerable malefactors which the African chiefs have to dispose of, are peculiarities which render slaves so very plentiful, that they may be procured almost for nothing along the whole line of Slave Coast. The present slave importers certainly act a most brutal part in so exceedingly crowding their vessels; yet, in mitigation of their crime, it may be adduced, that they save the lives of hundreds of wretches every year by bringing them from their native land; for the African kings and princes, when they cannot sell them, not unfrequently make a promiscuous slaughter of their unfortunate prisoners, when, from a sort of royal pride, invariably carried to an excess in despotic countries, they usually have their court-yards paved with their skulls, as did that renowned warrior—the King of Dehomy.

But royalty, such as I speak of, and war, with its interminable train of horrors, are scourges imposed by craft and power on suffering mortality; still, however, after all has been urged pro and con that subtile argument can adduce, it is questionable whether the African method of transporting troublesome characters is not almost as humane as the Malthusian or British mode, which is very chargeable, in place of being profitable, like the African plan. Indeed, about a hundred pounds is thrown away for making a British free-born subject become an indifferent slave; and this, in most instances, because a dozen men, often very ignorant ones, give it as their opinion that he has taken an illegal oath, robbed, or otherwise defrauded some person to the tune of a few shillings, or poached a head of game from the land of a rich man, who by no possibility could have missed it.

To resume my story:—It was truly amusing to a person like me, who at that time was not overstocked with the ductile feelings of philanthropic sensibility, to hear the bargaining and the cavilling which took place in the vending and the buying of this cargo of human beings. To particularize these transactions would be impossible, yet it may not be unworthy of observation, that the old saying relative to each sex being the best judge of the qualities of the opposite one, was, according to appearance, completely verified

here, inasmuch as the planters' wives, and the fair Creole ladies, were the chief examiners and purchasers of the Negro men; while the planters themselves, and numerous other gentlemen of Porto Rico, as likewise those who had come from the neighbouring islands to be present at this sale, more particularly scrutinized into the faults and the perfections of the Negro slave girls, and consequently became the chief dealers in them.

CHAPTER XI.

"'Steer to that shore!"---they sail. 'Do this!'---'tis done;
'Now form and follow me!'---the spoil is won.
Thus prompt his accents and his actions still,
And all obey, and few inquires his will;
To such, brief answer and contemptuous eye
Convey reproof, nor further deign reply."

"And glory long has made the sages smile;
'Tis something, nothing, words, illusions, wind---
Depending more upon the historian's style
Than on the name a person leaves behind."

THE slave cargo of the Santissima Trinidada having been sold to great advantage, the trio of captains, who were more or less concerned in the adventure, commemorated the event by a rare carousing match together at my commander's lodging, when they quaffed their burgundy and champaign, their hock and their claret; and, for the frolic's sake, were attended upon by the three prettiest jet black girls of all which the slaver had brought from Africa on her last voyage. The lasses, without having been landed, had, to serve their fantastic humour, been bought in at low prices by these bashaws, and at the dinner in question they attended habited in new white muslin dresses.

At this luxurious feast, arrangements were made by the three successful heroes for employing the two vessels on a new service, differing much from that in which they had recently been engaged; consequently the day following the craftsmen were set to work on them both, and so zealously did they labour, that a few days afterwards no person who had not been made acquainted with the transformation could have known the old black-sided slaver, changed, as she now was, into a bright yellow painted brig—a wicked, rakish looking vessel, bearing the British flag, and re-christened the Saucy Jack. The Santa Maria was also much altered in appearance, inasmuch as she now was rigged differently from what she had been, with her masts considerably more stooped; while in place of her being a black-sided vessel, she exhibited no less than three colours, her larboard side having been newly painted a bright yellow, her starboard a light green, and her stern a glaring white.

The three captains had their heads full of business on this important occasion. Soon, however, as the Saucy Jack was ready

for sea, and had got a few tons of marketable goods shipped on board of her, her anchors were hove to her bows, and sail was made on her to quit the harbour, under the command of the ci-devant merchant—the notorious Captain Robertson, who, never losing sight of the character he had assumed, with puritanical gravity now assembled his crew upon deck, and offered up prayers for a prosperous voyage, leaving his worthy colleague, the Spanish captain, long as he might stay away from Porto Rico, to act the merchant's part there in his stead.

While these events were taking place, I should observe that I was mostly detained aboard ship, being permitted to go on shore only when my commander required my services there, to act as a check upon Lieutenant Jones when he was employed fulfilling the office of interpreter; but at those times I was afforded ample opportunities for gleaning much information, and what I learnt gave me no little insight into the rascality of the characters I had to deal with, and was of a nature to fill the mind with fearful apprehensions for myself.

The Creole lady, my captain's hostess, on two occasions got an English sailor, who could converse with her in Spanish, to tell me I should do well to make my escape from the Santa Maria, and all persons belonging to her; yet, as I knew not how to accomplish this exploit, nor what were the lady's motives for furnishing me with her advice, I was dilatory in taking advantage of it, and this the more, as Captain Querorga had in some degree won my good-will, by his having presented me with a few dollars, and given me to understand that he would be the making of my fortune.

Three weeks had elapsed after the departure of the Saucy Jack, and still the Santa Maria lay at anchor in the harbour of Porto Rico; but on the twenty-second day an express boat from Jamaica brought letters both for our captain and his colleague, who acted the merchant's part, but so recently had commanded the slaver, and with the dawn next morning we hove anchor, and made sail from Porto Rico, shaping our course into the wide Atlantic, but still keeping in sight of land. The trade wind bore our vessel onward at a rapid rate, and during the second and third day of our voyage we sailed at a pleasant distance along the coast of the majestic island of St. Domingo, after which we stood further from the land, and continued doing so until we had weathered the easternmost end of Cuba, when we sailed some considerable distance along the coast of this very long isle, and afterwards stood more to the north, until eventually we reached the channel of the Gulf of Florida, at sixty or seventy miles distance from Cuba.

We had now been a whole week at sea from Porto Rico, and in that time seen a number of small trading vessels, though, contrary to the custom of a ship of war, we had either kept our course or stood away from them. One thing however should be

mentioned here, which is, that the night after quitting the harbour of Porto Rico our commander caused his vessel to be disguised, by affixing a ready-prepared black stripe of canvass along her sides and round her stern, of a sufficient breadth to cover the painting; and so well did this answer the intended purpose, that I am thoroughly satisfied no seaman, however familiar his sight might have been with her bright sides and stern, could, even through the best spy-glass, have made out the Santa Maria from on board a vessel passing near to her at sea.

At all times we kept a sharp look-out from the mast head; yet now the orders given to the man stationed there were more pointed than customary, and he was specially enjoined to look out for vessels coming along with the gulf stream; meanwhile we ourselves kept dodging about in such a manner as not very materially to lose head way.

We had been three entire days cruising about here, during which time we had seen several small vessels passing with the gulf stream, which, so far from molesting, we did not even approach near to, when at day dawn on the fourth morning we discovered a large deep-laden merchantman coming in full sail towards us. The wind and the gulf stream both favouring, she neared us very fast, meanwhile our captain examined her most minutely. Indeed the spy-glass was scarcely a minute from his eye till she had approached so near to us, that his crew evidently surmised he intended letting her pass, as he had the small vessels, unmolestedly on her voyage.

The crew were mistaken. Suddenly a signal gun for the stranger to lay-to was hoisted by our commander's order, and presently a gun was fired athwart the stranger's bows.

Further contumacy would have been altogether unavailing, and of this the merchant captain must have been sensible, for his mainyard was almost instantaneously backed, when we went to windward of him, and then lying-to spoke him through the speaking-trumpet. I was aloft in the foretop, and therefore knew not exactly what was said; but thus much I made out, that she was an English ship from Jamaica bound to London, and to the best of my hearing she was called the Columbine, or by a name nearly approximating to it.

A boat, in which, besides her crew, were Lieutenant Jones and several petty officers, with ten foremast men, was now despatched from us to board the merchantman; and almost immediately after they had mounted her deck, the British colours were struck, and her sails braced to the wind, to bear her on a different course to that which she had previously been on. We also made sail, shaping our course the same as the merchantman; and to shorten the tale, it suffices to say, that two days from this time we arrived in company together at a small barren uninhabited rocky island, near to which we both cast anchor, and which rock I have since

learnt lies not far remote from Turk's Island, so justly celebrated for its salt.

The ship we had so unceremoniously taken proved a glorious prize, and our crew considered the taking of her as a glorious affair, for barren empty-handed glory would have been no glory with them. But should we bring truth to the test, who shall say that this buccaneering exploit was not as glorious an affair as the taking of a proud Danish fleet by a nation at peace with the Danes? Successful power, however, will ever dictate its own conditions, and use even long-established laws as links of a chain to bind the weak.

We had scarcely dropped our anchors off the rocky isle before the boats of both ships were hoisted out, to be kept constantly employed landing the merchantman's cargo, which was a rich one, consisting of sugar, rum, coffee, and pimento. There was a circumstance on this occasion which created no little astonishment in my mind, which was, that there were no people of her own crew, no, nor her captain, the poor fellow whose voice I had heard speaking us through his trumpet, at the present time on board the Columbine. I own I felt strange suspicions regarding my unfortunate countrymen; but the lieutenant's advice to me respecting the necessity of my keeping a still tongue in my mouth was always fresh in my memory, therefore I took especial good care to evince no curiosity on the subject. However, shortly after this time the real truth came to my knowledge, told from the lips of Lieutenant Jones, and which happened in this way. I was employed one day helping to discharge her cargo, when he took me into the merchantman's state cabin to treat me to a glass of grog, and, being himself rather elevated by liquor, in the hilarity of his heart he made a sort of boast to me of his humanity, telling me how Captain Quirorga had ordered him to kill the merchant skipper and all his crew, and to throw their bodies overboard; instead of doing which, he added, he had served some grog out to them with a powerful sleeping-dose mixed therein, and when this had operated, and their senses were chained in sleep, taken them out of their hammocks, and, after lashing them by pairs back to back, cast their bodies into Davy's locker. The captain, he remarked, from not having imbibed his proper allowance of the grog, had been awake when taken from his bed, and consequently he had given the crew some trouble to make away with him, insomuch that they found it necessary to inflict a blow or two on his head before they succeeded in lashing him to the ship's steward, which however was done, and they perished overboard together.

Two days after our arrival at the rock, and while we were busily engaged landing the merchantman's cargo, a sail hove in sight, on which Captain Quirorga lost no time in shortening his cable, preparing his ship for action, and getting every thing ready to give chase to the stranger. She, however, was soon discovered

making direct for the island, and presently we hoisted a signal at our mast-head, which, by the assistance of his telescope, Captain Quirorga saw her promptly reply to. The wind was favourable, and the stranger vessel soon approached sufficiently near to be examined by the naked eye, when a man stationed at the mast-head proclaimed her to be the Saucy Jack, and so she proved. In less than two hours she lay anchored a few cables' length from the West Indiaman our prize.

Captain Robertson, from the Saucy Jack, and Lieutenant Jones from the prize, now proceeded on board the Santa Maria, when the former, who never divested himself of the cant of Methodism, with puritanical precision desired his interpreter to make it known to Captain Quirorga that the Lord had heard his prayer, and thus far made his voyage prosperous. He now called for a bottle of old hock, and also one of Spa water, and having mixed their contents in a large bowl, the confederated captains drank the invigorating draught between them, and then without further ceremony proceeded to the transaction of business.

By the discourse which now took place, it appeared that Captain Robertson was the person who transmitted the information from Jamaica which occasioned our sailing from Porto Rico, and subsequently making a prize of the merchant ship. As to the death of the captain of that vessel, a gentleman with whom Robertson had been intimately acquainted, the news of that event apparently afforded him pleasure; inasmuch as on hearing it he observed to Captain Quirorga, that he had been a man hostile to the dissenting interest, which was the main cause why he selected his ship for their prize, when he might have named another of equal, if not greater, value; but, turning up the white of his eyes while he spoke, he terminated this discourse by emphatically remarking, that with the blessing of Providence he yet hoped to see all the enemies of the dissenters exterminated, and after many a rich cargo belonging to them had been shared out among his worthy confederates.

The indefatigable Robertson was extremely desirous of hastening the Saucy Jack through the present business, so that she might be re-chartered for the coast of Africa, where, excessively to his annoyance, the French, the Portuguese, the Spaniards, and the Brazilians, whose ships of war never molested their slavers, were enjoying a monopoly of this most lucrative trade; consequently, as Robertson's pleasure was law with us, the most able hands of our three vessels were set to work to load the Saucy Jack from the part of the merchantman's cargo not landed; while such was the alacrity with which the men laboured, that at the expiration of five days the disguised slaver was full of cargo, the weight of which sunk her upper deck almost to the water's edge.

Captain Robertson was no novice in his business. He now filled up a forged bill of lading, which showed to a cask what cargo he

had on board, as also the day on which he had sailed from Jamaica for New York. This task achieved, with her hatches properly battened down, as a requisite precaution against bad weather, away went the Saucy Jack on her voyage to New York.

Quirorga was a worthy colleague of his friend Robertson. They neither of them were men to lose time when an adventure could be advantageously achieved; therefore, in furtherance of the plan they had on hand, all hands of us were busily kept at work landing the residue of the merchantman's cargo, and stowing it away between some rocks with that which had previously been landed, where it might be conveniently covered over with tarpaulings.

When we had completed the business of landing and stowing away her rich cargo, the merchantman was got ready for a long voyage in ballast, and, thanks to the able management of Robertson, good ship papers awaited her, by which she was represented to be an American ship, named the John Adams. Her place of destination was Chili, for which she sailed with eight hands on board, under Lieutenant Jones's command, just one week after the Saucy Jack's departure. Lieutenant Jones received instructions to sell her to the best advantage, and forward bills of exchange to St. Thomas's in the West Indies for the money she fetched; but after disposing of the ship, he himself and his eight men were to return to Porto Rico in a small sloop, which he had orders to purchase at Chili for the express purpose.

After the John Adams had quitted us, our crew had little or nothing to do, but the ship was still kept at anchor off the rocky isle whereon lay deposited our valuable West India produce. The treasure was intrusted to the care of two petty officers, who bore the character of being sober men, none other of the crew being permitted to set foot on shore, from an apprehension that they might make free with the rum, and thereby create disorder amongst us.

The Saucy Jack had been away a full month, when towards evening one day a sail hove in sight, bending her course for the rocky isle, but she was too far off for signals to pass between us; while, from the wind not being fair, there was no prospect of her reaching the isle before night-fall, consequently Captain Quirorga, as a precautionary measure, slipped his ship's cable with a buoy attached to it, and set sail to reconnoitre the stranger.

We all conjectured it was the Saucy Jack, and so she proved to be; the beautiful little vessel floated light as a cork, having scarcely ballast enough on board to enable her to keep the sea. Next morning we lay anchored nigh each other in our former berths, when the large boats belonging to both the ships were employed carrying freights from the rock to the Saucy Jack, which vessel, after seven days' labour in freighting her, was again so full of colonial produce, that we had to batten down her hatches once more that she might be sea-worthy; she, however, had now on board of her all that remained of the captured ship's cargo.

The sagacious Robertson, in his anxiety to get the Saucy Jack ready for the slave trade, had brought with him a set of ship's papers ready to fill up. By them it appeared, that the vessel had taken in a cargo at Jamaica for the neutral island of Saint Thomas; and he now carefully entered the colonial produce and other goods she had on board in his false bill of lading, which being done, the two ships hove their anchors.

Great however as may have been his anxiety to depart, still the ever methodical Robertson detained the ships lying-to, while he assembled a portion of their crews on the deck of his own vessel to perform the ceremony too common among greater powers, of putting up prayers for success in an unholy cause. This ceremonial having been gone through, the two ships made sail in company together from the rocky isle; but that there might be no evidence to adduce of their acting in collusion, they shortly afterwards separated, the Saucy Jack to make the best of her way to Saint Thomas's, by passing along the coast of Saint Domingo and of Porto Rico, and the Santa Maria to sail between Saint Domingo and Jamaica, into the Caribbean Sea, from thence, with her black canvass stripped from off her bright sides and her showy stern, to cruise nearer to the continent of America, ostensibly in search of Columbian ships, but in reality to capture the vessels of any nation where she could do so with apparent safety; and also to deceive the maritime and commercial world, by making it appear she had been employed in a quarter far distant from that vessel, and consequently could have had no transactions with the Saucy Jack.

CHAPTER XII.

" Let not his mode of raising cash seem strange,
Although he fleeced the flags of every nation;
For into a prime minister but change
His title, and 'tis nothing but taxation:
But he, more modest, took an humbler range
Of life, and in an honester vocation
Pursued o'er the high seas his watery journey,
And merely practised as a sea attorney!"

On our voyage between the islands of Cuba, Hispaniola, and Jamaica, we saw a number of small trading-vessels passing in all directions; but we made no signals to them, nor did we alter our course to approach near to any one of them. Our crew, however, examined the strangers with hawks' eyes, and seemed to think it a violation of their rights that any weaker vessel than ours should be allowed to pass us unplundered.

Hitherto we had acted the part of a treacherous wolf in lamb's clothing; but soon as we had got well away from the trio of large islands, the black canvass was stripped from the sides and stern of the Santa Maria, when she appeared on the wide waters in all her artificial beauty. Our course was also changed; for now we made sail with the wind astern of us, till in a few days we were embayed in the Gulf of Mexico. Here, in this long-celebrated quarter, we continued cruising for several weeks, during which time we visited the Bay of Honduras, and then shaped our course to the Musquito shore, the country of which always brings to mind the exploits of a notorious adventurer—a would-be cacique, who, for a puncheon or two of rum, is said to have purchased a principality, equal in size to a score or two of those of German sovereign princes. The possessions of the latter class, however, have a magical power; they qualify their master for marriage with a sovereign queen or other royal dame, as also for ascending a foreign throne; but his highness the cacique in question, on the strength of his possessions, could only procure large loans of money from among the greenhorns of Europe, numbers of whom, in return for the spoil reaped from them, he dubbed "Green Cross Knights," and "Grand Green Cross Knights;" an order of knighthood nearly as valuable as some of the orders of other princes, and, in the estimation of a true philosopher, intrinsically as good as that of the "fish-bone of Pellew," or the one instituted by a merry monarch in honour of a prostitute and her garter!

Hitherto nothing worthy of particular attention had occurred during this cruise; but now, while we laid at anchor off the Musquito shore, at a time, too, when the mulatto king of the land and half-a-dozen of his ministers, with as many of his wives, were on a visit to our gallant captain, on board his proud ship—and it should be observed that he seemed to be well known wherever he came to an anchor in this tropic—a small cutter, with three men on board, arrived in the bay where we lay, which brought despatches for Captain Quirorga from Carthagena, and, almost immediately after he had read them, the captain dismissed his royal guest, his ministers of state, and the rest of his suite, to hoist anchor, and shape our course towards the famous city of Carthagena, once the scene of exploits of the heroic Morgan, who, because a successful buccaneer, was twice intrusted with the government of Jamaica, and then, when his lawless power on the ocean had passed away from him, was not he doomed, by his weak, ungrateful monarch, to drag the dregs of life away in prison, merely because the king he served was desirous of gratifying the revengeful feelings of the Spanish king, and not as a punishment for crime or misdemeanor towards his own country, her monarch, or its interests?

Though we bent our course towards Carthagena, we never approached near enough to that proud city for our vessel to be discerned from the shore in its vicinity; but having, after some days' sail, made the land ourselves, we stood out further to sea, to cruise in the track of vessels voyaging between Carthagena and the West Indies. On the fourth day of our cruising here, "a sail in sight" was proclaimed by the top-man at the mainmast-head, when we crowded every stitch of canvass on the vessel; and though the stranger bore away from us with all her sails set, yet, after five or six hours of close chase, we got within gun-range of her. We now hoisted Danish colours, and signaled for her to lay-to; but she neither brought to, nor otherwise noticed our signals. This *ruse de guerre* having failed, we hauled down the Danish flag, and hoisted the British in its stead, when immediately the unsuspecting stranger hoisted British colours, and lay-to to be hailed by us.

At this time, necessity, backed by inclination and assiduity, had enabled me to master a little of the Spanish tongue; and our wary commander, being desirous of deceiving the stranger as long as possible, as to who and what we really were, now ordered all our blacks to keep themselves out of sight, and directed that none on board, save mulattoes and white people, should appear on the upper deck. These orders having been enforced, the captain directed me to speak the stranger, which accordingly I did, soon as we came within speaking distance, by hailing to ask what she was, whence she came, and to what place she was bound; to all which her captain replied, that her name was the Snipe, and that she was the British packet from Barbadoes to Carthagena.

The preceding information having been given by him, her captain, in return, asked what we were; to which I was ordered not to reply, but direct him to send a boat on board us, which I did, when the Snipe's commander, evidently disliking the appearance of things, directed that his main-yard should be braced to the wind, that he might make sail away from us.

Captain Quirorga, who could, when he pleased, be one of the gentlest-mannered men that ever held command over desperate adventurers, smiled on seeing the futile efforts the packet captain was making to shun all further scrutiny from him; but his smile was almost instantly followed by an order to one of his lieutenants to fire two double-shotted guns, pointed at the stern quarter of the packet. The order was joyfully obeyed, and the effect caused by the harsh measure was almost magical. The guns had scarcely been discharged, ere the men employed bracing round the packet's yard ceased their labours; when all would have been still as death on board that vessel, had it not been that there was a little bustle and confusion on the after part of her deck, which, as we afterwards heard, was occasioned by one of the passengers who had got wounded. Captain Quirorga now directed me to speak the stranger once more, to order her commander to come aboard us with his ship's papers, which order I fulfilled, when, without further hesitation, a boat was hoisted from on board the Snipe, in which her captain embarked, and it was soon seen being rowed towards us: meanwhile, as if to make assurance doubly sure, a boat was lowered down from our stern, in which a very ferocious fellow, who was our first lieutenant, together with thirty men, all of them well armed, were dispatched away to board the packet. The commander of the Snipe looked extremely desponding when he mounted to our deck, and beheld our terrific crew, who almost to a man had come forward to show themselves; and verily, I think, men could not look more frightful than these ruffians now looked. The rascals were well acquainted with their commander's summary mode of doing business; consequently, the grin of brutal satisfaction animated their ferocious countenances, for the packet's treasure, be it what it might, they knew was their destined booty.

What now passed on board the prize—for such, of course, she was to us—I knew not; but, on board us, Captain Quirorga contented himself with ascertaining from the mouth of her disconsolate commander, as well as from reference to her bill of lading, that the packet had actually got stowed away in her hold the large remittance of Spanish dollars, which, it seems, he had been previously informed the loan contractors in England had shipped on board of her, in payment of their instalment of the last loan taken by them for the Colombian government.

This information was amply sufficient for our captain, who had no idle questions to ask. He now ordered that his prisoner, the captain, together with the boat's crew, should be conveyed below

into the gun-room; and, in defiance of the remonstrances which the poor captain strove to make to our commander on this, to him, painful subject, the much-dreaded order was peremptorily complied with; but as the prisoners hung back, and would not go there of their own accord, they were forcibly conveyed below deck.

While the preceding conversation took place on board the Santa Maria, it seems that our first lieutenant had been employed in the task of unceremoniously lashing together by pairs the crew and passengers of board the packet, which he did with their backs to each other, and then placed them in confinement in the state cabin of their vessel, with several of his men as sentinels over them, who had orders given to them to blow out the brains of any captive who attempted to free his person from the cords with which he was bound.

After all proper precautionary measures had been taken to secure the prisoners, we despached another boat load of our crew to the prize, to assist the lieutenant in ransacking her; when, to shorten the story, so expeditiously and effectually did we fulfil this business, that, within twenty-four hours from the time when the second boat's crew were sent, not only her valuable freight of dollars, but every thing else that was deemed worthy of being taken out of the Snipe, had been conveyed on board of the Santa Maria.

The unfortunate commander of the packet, and the boat's crew which he had brought with him aboard us, were now re-conveyed to their own vessel; preparatory to which, on their quitting the Santa Maria, symptoms of joy became discernible on their countenances. Poor fellows! no doubt they thought it a happy event their getting away from us, and their hearts felt lightened of a portion of care at the prospect of rejoining their old companions in their own ship. "You are lucky fellows," whispered I to myself, as I looked at them passing over the fathomless blue ocean in their boat to rejoin the plundered packet; "yes, you will be the luckiest of the lucky, if you escape with your lives from a set of men who think no more of skinning living Protestants than of killing so many pigs!"

This my anticipation of evil was by no means erroneous. Alas! the genius of destruction was abroad, hovering over the poor sufferers' heads. They had scarcely rejoined their companions in misfortune, before our desperate lieutenant and his boat's crew of plunderers quitted the ill-starred vessel, most cold-heartedly leaving every one on board of her to perish by an untimely watery grave. To explain this lamentable circumstance, it is only necessary to add, that after our people had taken every thing they thought fit from the cargo, as also all that was worth pillaging from the passengers and crew, they set themselves to work scuttling the packet—a job they so ably effected, by means of boring holes in her hull, that she had already sunk considerably in the water before they themselves quitted her; and most assuredly she

would have gone to the bottom in less than an hour from the time our boat rejoined the Santa Maria, had she been then left to her fate: nevertheless, so impatient was our provident commander to get rid of this floating evidence of his last piratical exploit, that he now fired a broadside into the fast-sinking vessel, and in consequence, amidst the cries of the poor wretches on board her, not one of whom had time afforded him, even had he got freed from the cords that bound him, to jump into the little boat alongside the vessel, she immediately gave a great lurch to leeward, and then disappeared in the bottomless ocean.

He who places the smallest value on the life of man, when the deaths of his fellow-creatures, even of thousands of them, can produce any personal advantage to himself, is, I must avow, unfit to be a hero. For my part, not having yet been sufficiently schooled in the school of heroic deeds, I shuddered as I looked at the ship's masts, while they gradually disappeared in the briny abyss, after the hull of the packet had gone down; yet *that* which had been performed here was literally nothing, when compared with the blasting of a mine, the storming of a town, or the driving of an unresisting enemy into a deep river, to perish there.

Hundreds, yea, thousands of people may be mutilated or destroyed by either the one or the other of the last-named heroic exploits; but the sinking of the Snipe was a mere bagatelle—a trifling event, by which a paltry packet vessel was lost to her country, and seven passengers, and twelve men and boys who constituted the crew, were sent to a watery grave!

CHAPTER XIII.

"And thus their course they ran,
Though right ahead the roaring breakers lay:
A reef between them also now began
To show its boiling surf and bounding spray."

"Immediately the masts were cut away,
Both main and mizen; first the mizen went,
The mainmast follow'd."

"At last, with swimming, wading, scrambling, he
Roll'd on the beach, half-senseless, from the sea."

THE whelming ocean had scarcely resumed its ordinary appearance over the spot where the packet ship and all on board her had sunk, and must now have been sinking still deeper in her briny waters, before Captain Quirorga, who apparently, like most of the great men, his predecessors in the path of glory, meditated only on the future, and hardly bestowed a thought upon the past, had his ship's sails filled, to commence beating our way to Porto Rico, against the trade wind which blew almost right ahead of our proper course.

The captain, however, than whom no one knew better the nature of man, that same evening assembled his crew upon deck, when to furnish them with a sample of the pecuniary treasure we had taken out of the Snipe, and at the same time to put them in good-humour, he broke open a few of the chests of spices, and served out twenty dollars each to every man aboard, telling them at the same time, that the sum thus given would be sufficient for spending money at the first port, when we went ashore; and that the prize-list should be made out against their arrival at Porto Rico, when every man and boy amongst us would be settled with according to the number of shares that his berth on board entitled him to receive. This promise, from the lips of a man of honour, who invariably kept his word, proved so pleasing to his crew, that we all, with one accord, answered our noble captain's speech by three tremendous cheers; and all circumstances duly considered, perhaps this mode of showing our approbation of his conduct was the only suitable acknowledg-

ment we could have made to the brave man. An admiral or a general under a monarchy would be honoured by the men under them exactly in a similar way; yet prize-money with them is unjustly distributed, inasmuch as their commanders-in-chief scruple not at taking for themselves the portion of twenty or thirty thousand men; and their prize-laws bestow upon doctors, purveyors, and commissaries, each and every one of them, the allowance of one hundred fighting men—yea, and sometimes of more. With privateers, and among common pirates, honour and justice are more associated; they share as men ought to share spoils, won by a participation of toil and danger; for, as the aristocratic practice of enriching the few at the expense of the great mass, reaches not where there is anything like republican rule, four or five men's shares suffice for the commander of this description of heroes.

The ceremony of distributing the dollars having been gone through, and an allowance of rum from the packet's stores having been served out to every hand on board, such of the crew as were not on duty upon the watch proceeded below decks to turn into their hammocks, all extremely well contented with the events of the day, and the unambitious among us to contemplate the pleasing circumstance that two or three more such captures as the one we had just made would suffice to enrich us, so that we should have nothing more to do in life than drink good liquor, smoke Havannah cigars, and revel our time away on shore amidst plenty of every sort, in the society of abundance of good-humoured lasses.

To make a windward passage against the trade wind which blows into the Gulf of Mexico is anything but a pleasant undertaking; it needs a good sea-boat, and a great share of patience in those who embark in her. For my own part, I prefer plain sailing to embarking in a voyage to windward, and at any time would much rather pass smoothly over the ocean, with the trade wind which blows almost from Madeira to Carthagena, than suffer the misery attendant on making a voyage, even of five hundred miles, against this almost unceasingly steady wind. There are men, however, whose study it is to act against nature and common sense: one of these, a West India captain, though he had a ship full of passengers, obstinately attempted making the voyage from Jamaica to England in the very teeth of the trade wind. The consequences were, that his passengers, who were most of them invalids, died, almost to the last person; and with a crew worn out by fatigue, a vessel strained in her timbers, so as to become dangerously leaky, and his provisions almost expended, this obstinate skipper, after having beat against the trade wind for one hundred days, was compelled to change his course that he might reach the port of his destination, which, to the great injury of his owner, he did with a much damaged cargo.

The Santa Maria continued beating about, continually tacking

from side to side, and so violently shaken and tossed to and fro, that there was no comfort to be found for the human body in any position; till, at the expiration of a little more than a fortnight, we had made its head-land sufficiently to weather the Island of Jamaica, so as to make what at Jamaica is termed "the windward passage," which is done by passing between Hispaniola and Jamaica. It is true that our captain might have saved time, and spared his crew no small fatigue, had he bore away sooner, to have sailed through the Gulf of Florida; but he had substantial reasons for acting otherwise, and being free from the incumbrance of passengers, apparently he was in no hurry to terminate the voyage: moreover, this able commander, although he was as brave a man as any living, was a prudent officer, who in the main took good care of his crew; and, therefore, he must have felt a disinclination to be boarded, and, perhaps, overhauled by a British man-of-war, which might readily have happened, had he sailed by way of the Gulf of Florida. Policy required that he should get rid of the chests of dollars, and the remainder of the booty, which he had made ours by capturing the packet, before any such a *rencontre* took place.

We had spoken many little vessels during the last fortnight's cruise; but evidently they were none of them worthy our attention in the way of prizes, for the captain permitted them all to pass after speaking them, and intimating to those on board that our ship was a Spanish man-of-war, cruising in search of Columbian vessels and of pirates. The last vessel spoken by us was in passing between Jamaica and Hispaniola. She was a small Bermudian trader, named the Rob Roy, bound from Jamaica to St. Thomas's, and shortly after we had spoken her, an ominous dark cloud in the horizon gave us warning that a tropical hurricane was brewing.

The omen told too true: we had barely time to strike our topmasts before the furious tempest overtook us, and the sea keeping pace with it, ran mountains high; while, as it kept invariably to the same point, blowing on the eastern end of Cuba, the captain and his officers became seriously concerned for our safety, fearing it would be impossible for us to weather the Cuba coast. We, however, kept the ship as close to the wind as the violence of the hurricane would permit; but the sea canted her head so to leeward, that she made more lee than headway; and the rigging got so strained with the working of the vessel, that even the faint hope we had entertained of being able to keep her off the shore was constantly diminishing; in short, unless the wind changed or subsided, we saw that to effect this object would be utterly impracticable. Many of the sails blew into ribands—some of the rigging was carried away—yet, such were the exertions we made, that every stick which could possibly be struck we succeeded in lowering upon deck.

Shortly after it had become dark, captain Quirorga was

alarmed by an unusual noise upon the deck, and, running up, discovered that every sail of the vessel, save only the foresail, was totally carried away. The sight now was horrible, and the entire ship presented a spectacle as dreadful to the feelings as it was mortifying to human pride. Fear had produced among many the helplessness of despondency, and among some the mischievous freaks of insanity. Quirorga was firm amidst all the perils of his situation; but some of the crew were down upon their knees, clasping their hands, and praying with all the extravagance of horror depicted on their faces; while others, though not any great number, were flogging their images with all their might, calling upon them to allay the storm. At this juncture one of the petty officers mounted to the deck with a case bottle of rum in his hand, and with an air of distraction and deep despair imprinted in his face, was strutting about in his shirt, when the captain, perceiving him to be on the point of giving liquor to the crew about him, with a blow of his clenched fist knocked the daring offender backwards, and then threw the rum bottle into the ocean.

The brave Quirorga endeavoured to bring the wavering part of his ship's company to a becoming sense of their duty as seamen, and their dignity as men. He exhorted the sailors by his example, and strove to raise their spirits, by assuring them the storm did not appear by any means so terrible as some he had before experienced. While the captain was employed encouraging his crew, we shipped a sea on the larboard side, which every one thought would have sent us to the bottom. The vessel seemed to sink beneath her weight—she shivered and remained motionless; it was a moment of critical suspense, and by the tremendous sea thus shipped, seventeen of our crew were washed overboard.

At this dreadful crisis, the water rushed with incredible force through all parts of the vessel; yet the captain, finding she did not go down, exerted himself, in an extraordinary manner, to rouse his crew to a sense of their duty, and he succeeded in getting the splintered masts cut away, and what guns could be untackled thrown overboard—as also some spars and other things which encumbered the ship. The pumps, which recently had been useless, were, by the exertions now made, once more set agoing: it was with difficulty, however, that some few hands could be procured to work them, and the captain seeing this to be the case, stood at them himself, at once to encourage the men by his example, and prevent them from quitting the arduous duty; for, although our present situation apparently was hopeless, this undaunted officer was determined that no effort practicable on his part should be wanting to the preservation of the ship and those on board her. The water, however, gained upon us, notwithstanding all our exertions, and it was evident we could not long keep the vessel afloat.

About ten o'clock the hurricane was at its greatest height,

when the sky was so completely obscured with black clouds, save only at intervals, when it was illuminated by vivid forked lightning, and the rain fell so thick, that objects were not discernible from the wheel to the ship's forecastle. The pumps were again choked, and dismay was now painted on every countenance—nothing was to be seen but unutterable despair, and silent anguish and horror wrought up to frenzy. Scarcely a man of the crew was capable of making any effort that was useful, but all on board seemed more desirous to extinguish their calamities by embracing death, than willing, by painful exertions, to avoid, or at least procrastinate, their frightful doom. About eleven o'clock we heard a dreadful roaring noise, resembling that of waves rolling against rocks; but the darkness of the night, and the accompanying rains, prevented us from discerning anything, insomuch, that if it were rocks, we might be actually dashed against them till we went to pieces without our preceiving them. The wind, however, now lulled for a time, and the terrific sea seemed to have somewhat abated, which made the senses of the people return in some degree, and their stupefaction decrease.

We now discovered breakers, and large rocks without side of them, so that it appeared we must have passed quite close to them, and were now completely hemmed in between rocks and the land. At this frightful epoch our captain adopted the dangerous resolution of letting go an anchor, to bring the ship up with her head to the sea; but scarcely had he let go the anchor, before an enormous sea rolled over the vessel, which, in addition to its washing away many of the crew, overwhelmed and filled her with water, so that every one on board concluded she was unquestionably sinking. An African black at this juncture, with a presence of mind worthy of a thorough bred British mariner, took an axe, ran forward, and cut the cable.

Thus liberated, the vessel again floated, and made an effort to right herself; but she was almost completely water-logged, and heeled to larboard so much, that the gunwale lay under water. We now endeavoured to steer as fast as we could for the land, which evidently was not at any considerable distance, though we were unable to discover it through the hazy weather. By great efforts in baling, the ship righted a little, her gunwale was got above water, and she scudded before the wind, which still blew hard on shore.

The love of life countervails all other considerations in the mind of man, consequently the uncertainty we were under with regard to the shore before us, and all its dangers, was forgotten in the joyful hope of saving life, and we scudded towards the shore in all the exulting transports of a people just snatched from the jaws of death.

The gleam of happiness was of short duration—a tremendous sea rolling over the ship, broke over her stern, tore away every

thing before it, stove in the steerage, carried away the rudder, shivered the wheel to pieces, tore up the very ring-bolts of the deck, and conveyed the men stationed at the wheel, bruised and senseless, to the forepart of the ship, and then overboard.

When this terrific sea came rolling over us, I was standing near the wheel, and fortunately laid hold of the tafferel, which enabled me to resist in part the weight of the water. I was, however, swept off my feet, and dashed against the stump of the mainmast. The jerk from the tafferel, which I held very tenaciously, seemed as if it would have dislocated my arm; but it broke the impetus of the motion, and in all probability saved me from being dashed to pieces against the mast.

I now floundered about in the water at the foot of the broken mast, till at length I got on my feet, and seized hold of a rope, which I held in a state of great embarrassment, dubious what I should do to extricate myself. At this instant I perceived my messmate, the gunner's mate, had got upon the capstan, and was waving his hand to me to follow his example. This I wished to do, though it was an enterprise of great risk and difficulty; for if I lost the hold I had, a single motion of the vessel, or a full wave, would certainly have carried me overboard.

I made, however, a bold push, and fortunately accomplished my object. Having attained this station, I could the better survey the wreck, the deck of which was entirely under water, and I now perceived our surgeon standing where the water was most shallow, as if watching with patient expectation its rising, and awaiting the speedy death which must ensue. I called to him; but he shook his head in despair, and said in a lamentable tone, "It is all over with us," when, raising his hands, a whelming wave washed him far away into the ocean, where he was soon released from a state of suffering more deplorable than death.

The vessel was now completely water-logged, and while her larboard side was gradually sinking into the ocean, the deck, and of course the capstan, became too nearly perpendicular for me to remain on it, therefore I shifted my berth to the starboard side, holding fast by the gunwale, and allowing my body and legs to yield to the sea as its waves broke over me. Thus I continued for some time; but the severity of the labour exhausted my strength and spirits, till the best hope I entertained seemed to be that of an early conclusion to my painful death, and I began to think seriously of letting go my hold, and of yielding myself at once to the fury of the waves.

The ship, which continually approximated the shore, at length struck the ground, which for an instant revived our almost departed hopes; but we soon found that it availed not, in the smallest degree, to better our condition. The crew now began to consult together about the best means of getting on shore, and I made an effort to reach the lee shrouds, to which many of our hands

were clinging; but, ere I could accomplish the desperate task, I lost my hold, and fell down the hatchway, the gratings of which had been washed overboard, together with the long-boat. Here I was for some minutes entangled among a heap of packages, which the violent fluctuation and dashing of the water had collected on the lee side, when, as the ship moved with the sea, and still more water flowed in, I and the packages were rolled about together, sometimes one and sometimes another uppermost, until ultimately I grasped something that lay in my way, made a vigorous spring, and gained the lee shrouds. I now called to the black gunner's mate to make his way to where I was, but he noticed my speech only by shaking his head in a truly despondding manner, staring wildly about him! Poor man! his spirit was subdued, and his strength exhausted—despair had taken possession of his mind.

I had scarcely ceased calling to my honest messmate, when a tremendous sea rolled over me, shook every thing from its place, and carried me, the brave Quirorga too, and I believe every other survivor on board us, along with it into the vast ocean. Death now seemed inevitable; yet, amidst all the confusion of intellect occasioned by my sudden immersion, it came to my recollection that if a man will throw himself flat on his back in the water, lie quite stiff and straight, and suffer himself to sink till the water gets into his ears, he will continue to float in his position.

The happy thought with which I was inspired was not thrown away upon me, for I threw myself on my back in the way just mentioned, and left myself to the disposal of Providence, when I floated with hardly an effort, and began to conceive faint hopes of preservation. After lying in this manner, committed to the mercy of the wind and the tide, without having once turned from my back, after a time my body struck upon a sandy beach, when, overjoyed at my providential deliverance, I made a convulsive spring to gain my legs, which I effected, and ran up a little distance on the shore; but I was so weak, and worn down by fatigue, and so unable to clear my stomach of the salt water with which it was loaded, that suddenly I grew deadly sick, when I felt apprehensive that I had only exchanged one miserable death for another—in a minute or two, however, I became senseless.

CHAPTER XIV.

"Night wanes—the vapours round the mountains curled
Melt into morn, and light awakes the world.
Man has another day to swell the past,
And lead him near to little but his last."

"The sun, which yearly melts the polar ice,
Has quite the contrary effect on vice."

THE morning of a new day had dawned upon the Island of Cuba before I awoke to the slightest recollection of my situation. I was then lying in a bamboo and mud hut, stretched on the ground upon a wretched bed, made of the large leaves of the cabbage tree. A woolly-headed African negro and a mulatto woman, his wife, together with their four children and an infirm old negress, were my companions; but presently the six first-named went away from the hut to their place of labour in the field, leaving the aged woman to take care of me.

When my senses became sufficiently collected to contemplate my situation, I felt much grieved to think that my wealth and bright prospects had now passed away from me, for the Santa Maria, and every thing living or dead on board of her, except a few straggling sailors, who had since been picked up from floating upon spars, or been driven on shore upon them, the negro man, previous to his going out, had, in Creole Spanish (which, thanks to my perseverance in acquiring the language, during my late eventful career, I could pretty well make out) given me to understand had been ingulfed in the ocean, or shattered to pieces by the tremendous hurricane, shortly after our beautiful ship struck upon the rock.

A good chest of clothes, which I had collected together by degrees, and upwards of sixty dollars, which I had kept deposited in my chest, were lost to me by the wreck of the Santa Maria, and, what was still worse, all the specie we had taken from out of the packet ship was gone for ever; therefore I could make no claim for the prize-money on that head, should I live to reach Porto Rico once more, where I scarcely knew whether I ought to attempt going; for although, from the destruction of most of our ship's crew, I should now have an equitable claim to a large sum as my share of prize-money for the cargo of the Columbine,

yet the uncertainty respecting how Captain Robertson might treat me and my claim, combined with the knowledge I had of the man himself, and of the dread character he bore, made me think he would not scruple a moment at depriving me of life, should he deem it good policy, and this thought filled my mind with evil bodings on the occasion.

It may be imagined that I should feel no great regret for the lives of my companions, who had so miserably perished; but he who reasons thus, knows not the human heart. Man is a sociable animal, and let his intimate companions be who they may, he cannot see them snatched away, by an untimely fate, without deploring the sad event; besides, death, by visiting those immediately about us, forcibly reminds us of our own danger; therefore, in some measure, it is a selfish feeling which actuates us when compassionating the fate of such lost companions. But in addition to these general reasons for deploring the death of such a multitude of my own species, I was in many instances swayed by more personal motives, as, amidst the most ferocious characters ever assembled together, pleasing companions and warm-hearted friends are to be found; and it would be acting an ungrateful part towards the memory of the departed, if I did not honestly avow, that among the savage-looking, ignorant negroes and mulattoes, so recently my shipmates, many had acted kindly by me, and proved by their conduct, in various instances, that the face is not the counterpart of the heart.

When, in a most melancholy mood, I had mused for some time on the untimely end my shipmates had come to, the imminent peril which I had myself been in, and the present sad vicissitude of my affairs, suddenly I called to mind that two doubloons were in the fob of my trousers at the time we were wrecked; and scarcely did I recollect this circumstance, ere, by signs and the little broken Spanish I was master of, I endeavoured to find out from the old negro woman what had become of my trousers.

The woman, who was a martyr to the worst kind of yaws, which had already eaten away some of her fingers, was also so extremely stupid, that I could not bring her to understand what it was that I required; but at almost every fresh attempt I made to obtain the much-desired information, she would bring me yams or fruit, or some other article of produce of the country.

Kindness, proffered at an improper time, is scarcely considered such, and this negro woman's kindness, shown when I wanted to have my curiosity gratified, and not my appetite for food, was even provoking to me; but there was no remedy save patience, therefore I ceased making signs or speaking, and stifled my feelings to chew the cud of reflection in silence.

The negroes in the West Indies, even in the Island of Cuba, are infinitely better off than the peasantry of England. The industrious among them all have plenty of rum, sugar, coffee, tobacco, salt fish, tropical fruits, and vegetables of many kinds;

and it is the negro race who supply the markets with pork, fruit, poultry, and fish.

These facts being made known, it cannot be wondered at that in my host's absence I was supplied with every thing necessary in the eating and drinking way; for although the old negress either would not or could not make out my request respecting my trousers, she took care to put cooked yams, ripe bananas, plantains, and other fruits, beside my bed. She likewise, by her prudent conduct, made it evident that she knew what was fit for a person in my condition, inasmuch as she kept from me the rum bottle—that solace to the mariner in his troubles, but which now might have thrown me into a burning fever.

About sun-set my host and his family re-appeared in their place of dwelling, when the worthy man expressed much satisfaction at finding me in so promising a state. The question uppermost in my mind now found vent, and, with the eagerness of youth, I asked my sable host to render an account of my trousers; when he, perhaps seeing my anxiety, smilingly said that I was in no fit condition to go abroad, and therefore need not be in a hurry to clothe myself. Presently, however, he opened an old chest, which stood in a corner of the room, and had been covered over with branches of plaintains, and taking from it the clothes I had worn at the time of the wreck, handed them to me on my bed, when, such was my anxiety to recover my treasure, that, without reflecting on my strange conduct, I most eagerly examined the fob of the trousers, and to my consternation found that it contained nothing. I felt again and again like one not crediting the evidence of his senses, or determined not to believe an astounding truth which he fears.

My good-humoured host, who was honest and sincere, for unprincipled missionaries had not been tolerated in Cuba to corrupt the negro population, seeing my distress, kindly relieved my mind by producing my two doubloons, when, giving them to me, he said he wished there were ten times more of them for my sake.

Not to dwell on this part of my history, I shall content myself by stating, that on the day following the recovery of my gold pieces, though still very sore from my bruises, and suffering from fever, I contrived to leave my lowly bed, and sit up for a time under a shady mango tree near the hut; and two days after this my host brought a Spanish planter, his master, to see me. This gentleman had, from the time of my shipwreck, been away from his plantation, transacting his shipping business at the not far distant town of St. Jago de Cuba. He was a friendly, good man, and gave me to understand he was well pleased with his slave Sancho for having taken care of me; but he said I should now go to his caza with him, and remain there his guest until my health got established.

This was a most acceptable invitation to me, and upon the

back of a mule I was now conveyed to the planter's dwelling, which was a convenient wooden house of one floor, adjoining the building in which he prepared his colonial produce for the market; but previous to our quitting Sancho's hut, I got the planter to give me change for one of my doubloons, when, as a mark of gratitude, I forced the sum of five dollars upon my black host and his wife, who, however, much to their credit, wished for no remuneration for their kindness shown to me.

The planters in the West Indies, no matter from what country they may have come, are hospitable people. For my part, I was treated as kindly by Senor Fabricious as if I had been a relative. Here I stayed seventeen days, during which I heard tidings of twenty-five of the crew of the Santa Maria, whose lives had been preserved from the wreck. Most of them had quitted the island in trading vessels of other states.

When I had sojourned with him seventeen days, my host had occasion to visit the Havannah, to make a purchase of slaves, and the journey being long and tedious by land, he decided on voyaging there in a drogher, which is a little coasting vessel; and I, wishing to see the Havannah, and deeming it the best place to embark at, made up my mind to accompany him. Accordingly we embarked at St. Jago de Cuba, and three days afterwards arrived in safety at the Havannah, for several ages famous as the place of rendezvous for the rich galleons and other vessels coming from Mexico and Peru to proud and once-powerful Spain.

The grandeur and extent of this wealthy city filled my mind with astonishment, which elicited remarks from me that a North American Indian or a Castilian would not have exposed his weakness by making, for the American savage and the haughty Spaniard are disciplined in a way which allows them not to betray childish weakness by declarations of astonishment on beholding the works of other men. Great, however, as the Havannah appeared to me, who had previously seen no other town of note except Portsmouth, it had recently suffered a diminution in size by a fire, which destroyed upwards of twelve hundred houses.

At St. Jago de Cuba, Senor Fabricious had kindly assisted me in purchasing a suit of clothes, and at the Havannah he became the guest of his factor, who also admitted me into his house, and proposed giving me some employment, thinking I might be useful to him in his transactions with my country people, many of whom frequented the Havannah for mercantile purposes.

The cargo of slaves from which my friend had purposed making his purchases, was disposed of before our arrival; but this traffic was then in a flourishing state, and another slave ship entered the Havannah ten days subsequent to our arrival. She, however, brought into port only one-half of her customary cargo, therefore no reduction took place in the price of human beings.

But the story of this ship's last voyage furnishes proofs of the lamentable results attributable to over-strained exertions, where no real power exists to do away with the slave trade. The slaver in question had been chased by a British cruiser, when, to lighten the cargo, the crew cast half of their slaves into the sea, and the other half were destined to follow to prevent the vessel becoming a legal capture to the cruiser; an event which assuredly would have happened, had not the ship of war, by crowding too much sail, carried away her foretopmast, and thus enabled the slaver to escape into the Havannah, while it baulked the hopes of the man-of-war's men, regarding the head-money they would have been entitled to for the negroes on board; which large sum of money the British Government would have paid to the uttermost fraction, even had the same captured negroes been afterwards given up to the Spaniards at Cuba, and sent into the very bondage for which the English treasury had been drawn upon to save them; this truth, however, is too well known to be commented upon, and misdirected philanthropy has often caused England's gold to be circulated to uphold that slavery in foreign colonies, which Britain has abolished in her own.

Senor Fabricious, who happened to be very short of hands on his plantation, owing to the hooping-cough and the yaws having visited his negroes, and carried off a number of them, was much disappointed at having the full price to pay for the slaves he now bought; and though he was rather a philanthropic character, this circumstance made him become violent in his invectives against the Anti-Slavery Society and its duped partisans. However, as there is no struggling against necessity, and he could not do without them, the Senor purchased five negroes; but the sum he paid for them would have bought eight, had the entire cargo of the slaver reached the Havannah, in place of having had a moiety of the poor Africans thrown into the ocean to perish—thanks to the Quixotic effort of people calling themselves philanthropists.

Senor Fabricious having completed his purchases, prepared to return home; but, as will be seen by the catastrophe I have to recount, he was not destined to fulfil that intention.

The Spanish character has always been remarkable for harbouring the mean passion of jealousy, while, unfortunately, the Spaniards themselves have too rarely shown scruples of conscience in sacrificing the suspected offender to their sanguinary revenge. It might however be thought, that the demoniac passion of jealousy would not be blown into a great flame, even in the breasts of Spaniards, where the Venuses they have to be jealous of are mostly black or mulatto beauties; yet the very contrary is the case at the Havannah, and every person who has been there well knows it.

At the time in question, the green-eyed monster seemed to have found his way into almost every dwelling, but whether

it was owing to the good-natured frailty of the ladies, or to the natural character of the Spaniards, or to both combined, that it had made this great progress, is a delicate subject to pronounce upon, and one on which, as I am no casuist, I shall not hazard an opinion.

There was no safety for man in walking the streets, much less in going to places of public amusement, and many were the unfortunate men and officers of the sea service who had recently been assassinated, and whose bodies had been found in the streets. As to any redress being obtained, it was totally out of the question, for the public authorities of the town slighted complaints on the subject, and seemed to consider the revenge taken as nothing more than fair.

Good sometimes will spring from evil, and this absolute lack of morality on all sides gave birth, in my mind, to sound reflections and just comparisons. Indeed, who could contemplate such passing events, without marvelling to think how men could be found insane enough to slay others for worthless women, ever ready for fresh intrigue; and who, that like me, had associated with buccaneers, could possibly avoid thinking of their superiority of character for manliness, yea, and for virtue too—to a set of Spaniards who most basely murder each other, as well as strangers, on account of the most faithless of women; they themselves forgetting, while they perpetrate these dreadful deeds, that the basis of liberty is the free disposal of ourselves.

It was considered rather a memorable circumstance, when a day passed over on which one sailor or more had not been murdered; but I little dreamt that the assassin's stiletto, usually employed against sailors, was destined to pierce the heart of my only friend here, who was aged, and not even suspected of gallantry. This, however, it was made to do one unlucky night, when the poor planter and I were on our way home together from the house of a merchant with whom we had dined.

At the moment of the dreadful assassination of my friend I happened to be a little distance behind him in the street, but I saw the assassin come from under a gateway and give him the vengeful stab, when instantly the unfortunate gentleman staggered and fell. The man was now going to search his victim for booty, but I suddenly came upon him, and a most fierce struggle ensued between us, when I was in imminent danger, for he was an active and a determined man. However, though I received several slight wounds from the stiletto of this villain, fortune at last favoured me in the fight, his vindictive fury having somewhat exhausted his strength, and in my own defence, to save my own life, I had no alternative, but plunged my dagger into his body.

CHAPTER XV.

"Despised Jamaica! when thy fate is seal'd,
Proud England's degradation shall be peal'd
Throughout the world!"

"I love the beauteous isle!"

THE sanguinary deed I had achieved might be thought an astounding one for a youngster, but the school I had recently come from among pirates, and my own excited feelings at the loss of my benefactor, served to steel my heart on the occasion. I however stood for some seconds by the dying assassin, meditating what I should do, when happily a party of several Spaniards passing along the street, singing a national air, roused me from my reverie, and I hailed them to come to my assistance.

The Spaniards readily complied with my request, when I briefly related to them what had passed, and happily the dying murderer survived long enough to confirm my testimony, and to acknowledge that robbery had been his object in committing the foul deed; after which, assisted by the generous strangers, I conveyed the body of my unfortunate friend to the residence of his factor, where the melancholy sight thus afforded, and the lamentable tidings I had to communicate, filled the worthy gentleman and all his family with unfeigned sorrow and consternation.

The following day, for funerals within the tropics take place soon after life has become extinct, I attended that of my poor friend to a neighbouring church, whence, after the customary ceremonies of the Catholic service had been performed over him, I proceeded with it to the burial-ground, and saw the corpse consigned to our parent earth.

This duty of friendship having been performed, the factor, who was a generous man, called me into his closet to repeat his proposition of taking me into his employ; but the late melancholy event had prejudiced me against remaining at the Havannah, and I therefore modestly but respectfully declined accepting his offer, and communicated to him the intention I had formed of proceeding to Jamaica, where I thought I might obtain in-

formation to enable me to prosecute my claim for prize-money for the West Indiaman's cargo, as it was well understood that its capturers, Captain Quirorga and his crew, were to have shared in the booty with Robertson, who had disposed of the valuable produce. The factor expressed regret at the determination I had come to, and endeavoured to reason me out of it; but on finding I was unchangeable, he pressed me to remain a few days with him, when, he said, a lugger was to sail for Jamaica in which he had an interest, and I should pay nothing for my passage. Accordingly I continued at his house until the appointed time, when the worthy gentleman conducted me on board the vessel, and made me a present of twenty dollars as a small token, he said, of the respect he bore to the memory of his departed friend, Senor Fabricious, and of approbation of my gallant conduct in revenging his death, when he wished me success in the world, and bid me good by.

The distance from Cuba to Jamaica is but trifling, and two days from the time of embarkation I was standing on the lugger's deck at anchor near the shore, looking at and admiring the latter island, when I sketched out the following account of it, which I subjoin for the information of such persons as may not have visited this highly-productive, ever-blooming luxuriant island :—

"The first appearance of Jamaica presents one of the most grand and lively scenes that the creating hand of Nature can possibly exhibit. Mountains of an immense height seem to crush those that are below them, and these are adorned with a foliage as thick as vivid, and no less vivid than continual. The hills, from the summits to the very borders of the sea, are fringed with trees and shrubs of a beautiful shape and undecaying verdure; and you perceive mills, works, and houses, peeping amongst the branches, or nearly buried amidst their shades.

"The sea is, in general, extremely smooth and brilliant, and before the breeze begins to ripple its glossy surface, is so remarkably transparent, that you can perceive (as if there were no intervening medium) the rocks and sands at a considerable depth, the weeds and coral that adorn the first, and the stars and other testaceous fishes that repose upon the last.

"Every passing cloud affords some pleasing variation, and the glowing vapours of the atmosphere, when the sun arises or declines, and when the picturesque and fantastic clouds are reflected on its polished bosom, give an enchanting hue, and such as is only particular to the warmest climates, and which (I have since ascertained) much resemble those saffron skies which so strongly mark the Campagna of Rome, and the environs of Naples."

Providence, which must be of close affinity to Nature, for she provides for all natural wants and contingencies, has by those

inestimable gifts of hers, the land and sea breezes, shown herself peculiarly beneficent to the human race, as also to all other living creatures and things vegetating in the West Indies.

During the day here the solar rays rarify the air on shore, and dry up the moisture on the surface of the earth, and this it is which occasions a breeze on every side to blow from the sea towards the centre of each island. On the contrary, as soon as the sun sets, the heavy dew, peculiar to the tropics, begins to arise from the earth, and this, during the whole night, keeps driving back the sea air—to which latter source it is we are indebted for the land breeze.

These breezes, except during the time of a hurricane and perhaps an earthquake, are as faithful to their courses as time itself is to its march—only, it is to be observed, that they vary in their strength according to the seasons and the temperature of the air.

At a large island, such as Jamaica, sometimes their influence extends to not more than three or four miles from the shore, while at others the breezes will be felt full twenty miles distant from the land.

For the purposes of navigation they are peculiarly advantageous, inasmuch as they enable the mariner to know the proper time for approaching the shore, and for quitting it. Were it not for the assistance afforded by these much-favouring breezes, coasting vessels bound to windward ports would have no way of evading the trade wind, which they do by keeping near to the shore.

The lugger I was on board was indebted to these breezes for getting, in three days, to the place of her destination, an harbour on the south side of the island, celebrated for its great shipments of coffee, and named Alligator Pond.

The wharfinger's house was the only one at the place of landing, and in the first boat which put to shore after we anchored I proceeded there, intending to make inquiries regarding the best mode of proceeding to Kingston, the capital mercantile town of the island.

When I landed, the wharfinger, who was a swarthy, sickly-looking man, was sitting in his varanda, facing the sea, to catch all that he could of the coming breeze; and the captain, having introduced me to him, we sat down to table to partake of his second breakfast.

In reply to my inquiries, the wharfinger informed me, that Kingston is nearly seventy miles from Alligator Pond, and that to journey there by land would be fatiguing and expensive, as it would be necessary to travel the whole way on horseback, and have my own horse, for no person in that neighbourhood hired them out. He advised me to wait the arrival of a Kingston drogher, which might be expected in a week; meanwhile, he

said, I could pass my time pleasantly visiting among the planters, who would any of them show me hospitality. Presently, too, before we had finished our breakfast, several of these gentlemen, who had descended from the mountains to see to the shipment of their coffee, entered the room, and when it was made known to them how I was situated, they invited me home with them; while, as they had spare mules and horses at the wharf, which had carried their bags of coffee that morning, there was no difficulty in providing me with a steed.

Where injuries are inflicted, the injured will complain. I now heard a great deal of the rascality of the negro population here, which had began to set their betters at defiance, and act as if they were assured that the lands and buildings of the country would speedily be their own. One of the planters present had that morning to investigate into the circumstances connected with a robbery of coffee, and he procured evidence, which seemed conclusive, against an Hebrew storekeeper, of his having purchased an entire cask of that prized article from a negro, who had stolen it from his master. However, as it will prove that *theft* is of all trades the most profitable in this quarter, I shall communicate the almost incredible fact, that receivers of stolen produce are known to ship, and sell nearly as great a quantity, as the proprietors of estates who grow and manufacture the articles!

When the sun was sinking in the horizon I mounted a good hackney, and accompanied two of the planters on their ride home to the Manchester Mountains. The road was almost one continued ascent; but we reached Mandeville, distant fifteen miles, in less than two hours. Here my companions had to separate; but, to use the language of the country, they proposed having "a drink" before they parted, and for this purpose we adjourned to the tavern, then, with the exception of the session-house, the workhouse, and the parsonage, the only building in this assize town. It was named after the second title of a man whose aristocratic consequence has mainly been upheld by the sweets gleaned by him during a protracted term of governorship over this rich island.

To pass over minute particulars, it will suffice to say, that I remained fifteen days amongst the ever-hospitable residents of Manchester parish, living, as they termed it, "on planters' fare." At some of their houses I was feasted most sumptuously, but every where treated with urbanity and kindness. Woodlands, the favourite residence of a great proprietor here, I shall never forget. Its owner was hospitality itself. He was warm-hearted, much-esteemed, a member of the assembly, a major-general of the militia, and, to his lasting honour, a real patriot.

After sojourning here for the term mentioned, at a *dejeune* given at the pleasantly-situated plantation of Java, I met the

custos of the parish, who, having been informed how I was situated, kindly proffered me the use of a spare horse to travel in his suite to Spanish Town. Accordingly, with the dawn next morning we descended the hills to Spring Plain estate, seven miles distant, where the party breakfasted with the worthy proprietress, and afterwards proceeded on for Spanish Town. Fortunately there had been no rain very recently; therefore, without inconvenience, we passed across the bed of Dry River, which after rains is impassable. This journey well evinced the hospitality of the country; for, as a matter of course, every body's house was open to us, and the whole party invariably dined at one estate, slept at another, and breakfasted at a third; until, after two days spent in this way, we arrived at Ensom Pen, a sweetly situated villa appertaining to the custos of Manchester, and which stands near a bank of the rapid river, the Rio Cobra, surrounded by extensive and luxuriant grounds.

Spanish Town is the seat of government of Jamaica, and has been so, not only from the time when Oliver Cromwell added this fine island to the British possessions, but it was such under the Spaniards before us, who made choice of this spot when they conquered the aboriginal inhabitants and colonized the isle. Spanish Town, however, is not conveniently situated for commercial purposes, therefore, as a town, it has never throve; and save a few public buildings, the place contains little more than negro huts, and a few lodging-houses.

On the other hand, Kingston is the focus of trade. It stands at a most convenient part of the most commodious and safe harbour in the whole island. Until just prior to the time in question, it had, from our earliest knowledge of its history, been a wealthy town. The Spaniards enriched it; the buccaneers enriched it; and the merchants, as long as there was any security for property, trebly enriched it; but, when I went there, Kingston was a drooping, spiritless, miserable place, overrun by missionaries and corrupted by the cant of Methodism. But the West India isles have been scurvily treated by the mother-country; indeed, since she prides herself on the maternal character, she may be said to be an unnatural parent. The toiling islanders have long been taxed to uphold placemen and pensioners, but they toiled on in quiet, and bore the taxation with patience. Their miserable fate is precipitated on them by the rule of men totally ignorant of their localities—for what are Colonial Secretaries, but statesmen who have just sufficient influence to get the rich appointment? and, to retain it, must act under the mandates of artful, brawling demagogues, many of them wearing the cloak of religion, whose fallacies, uttered at meetings of the fair sex, tend to deceive the gentle-hearted, as also to the destruction of happiness, property, and order in the colonies where negroes are employed.

Oh, ye lovely islands of the west! Nature has been lavish in her gifts to you; but rapacious man has so regulated your affairs, that there is no security left for the estates of the living or the dead. For example, any body there may throw his neighbour's property into Chancery, which is threefold more expensive than in the mother-country, and

> "Courts of justice understand
> The plaintiff to be eldest hand."

While as to the testaments of the departed, they avail but little for the intended heirs, when escheats are sought after to further enrich overpaid governors and presiding worthies of the long robe.

The colonies, too, which in the height of their prosperity knew not of such evangelical appointments, are now blessed by having to pay highly endowed bishops, even where the language of the people is unknown to the prelate; but I beg pardon of the right reverend fathers, for I should have denominated them "lord" bishops, as some are regular sticklers for their right to the double title.

CHAPTER XVI.

"Synods are mystical bear-gardens,
Where elders, deputies, churchwardens,
And other members of the court,
Manage the Babylonish sport."

"He was the mildest manner'd man
That ever scuttled ship or cut a throat,
With such true breeding of a gentleman,
You never could divine his real thought."

THE Fatalist maintains there is a fate in every thing, and the Turk, though he may run like a madman at sight of the lance of his Cossack foe, is a Fatalist in the fullest sense of the word; occasionally, however, events fall out so strangely, that a person of the soberest judgment is half inclined to be of the Turk's opinion.

I had not long arrived in Kingston, ere, in passing along the streets, my attention was attracted to a number of staid-looking personages, sallying forth from a meeting-house, and I overheard one gentleman say to his companion, that a synod of Methodist parsons had been in conference there. "Zounds," thought I, "I'll warrant that Robertson's relative is amongst the crew;" when, without knowing the evangelical man's name, much less his person, I looked attentively at the demure characters, as they severally came out of the conventicle. A corpulent glossy black man, and a sickly yellow-faced Creole, duly habited in sable dresses, of a most puritanical fashion, for a time engaged my attention, but presently, spying out a squinting, carbuncle-countenanced gentleman, leaning on the arm of another, I turned my eyes to discover what kind of a man was his supporter; when, to my unspeakable astonishment, I beheld in that individual my old friend Captain Robertson. "A bad man may be made still worse by keeping bad company," said I to myself, as I looked at these path-directors to heaven. "The grain, however, shall be sifted from the chaff, before I make myself known to my old friend." It was a prudent resolve, and to act up to my resolution, I followed about after the party at a convenient distance, until at length Robertson bid good day to his companions, and entered the door of a lodging-house. I paused for a few minutes, and then knocked at the door to inquire for Captain Robertson, when a black girl made her appearance, who, on learning my business, at once ushered me into the apartment where he was. I had felt dubious how he would receive me, but his reception of me was kind, and he expressed joy at my escape from the wreck of the Santa Maria. Captain Robertson now informed me that he had come to Jamaica

expressly to make inquiries regarding the shipwreck, and the survivors of the crew; but he said, that in addition to me, he had met with only two, and they were ignorant blacks, who had given a lame account of the dreadful misfortune.

At his desire, I related the particulars of our cruise, and of the prize we had taken; as also, minutely as I could, of the storm preceding it, and our terrific shipwreck, when it became evident to me, from the exclamations and observations that escaped his lips, on hearing the sad tale, that he had been a great part owner of the Santa Maria; and he avowed his disappointment at finding we had not disembarked any of the captured treasure; and, moreover, intimated that Quirorga ought to have gone to St. Domingo to have done so, for that silver bore a premium there, and good bills could have been procured by him; whereas, he had wantonly risked the dangers to be apprehended from discovery, and consequent capture, as likewise those of shipwreck on the coast of Cuba, which last had visited us, to the destruction of our vessel, the treasure on board, and the crew. On the loss of human life, however, Robertson made very few comments, for he was by far too heroic a character to attach much importance to such an event; indeed, my opinion is, that provided our treasure in specie had previously been landed in a place of safety, he would inwardly have rejoiced, if every individual on board the Santa Maria had been drowned.

There is nothing like having an eye to the main chance, and I, after having given Robertson all the information in my power, discovering that he was going to dismiss me without saying a word regarding the merchandise taken by us out of the Columbine, ventured to put some home questions to him on that delicate subject; but his answers were vague and unsatisfactory: at length, however, finding me resolved on the subject, he suddenly changed his manner; and, from having been very formal, became affable and friendly; when, after some preliminary discourse, he informed me that he purposed to embark soon for St. Thomas's, and would take me with him, and that there I should be paid my quota of prize money: he even hinted, that provided I conducted myself to his satisfaction, he would be the making of my fortune; but cautioned me, above all things, as I valued our lives, not to mention the name of the West Indiaman our prize, especially in Jamaica.

That I might the better delve into the secret views of this extraordinary man, I readily agreed to every thing he proposed to me, while in unhesitatingly promising not to name the Columbine, I consulted my own welfare, as the act of piracy committed in taking of her, and the barbarous action of making away with her captain and her crew, might, if known, have brought my life into the greatest jeopardy. On parting, he presented me with a few dollars, and told me to be with him at an early hour next morning. "Ah, my old governor," added I, as I walked away from the house, "you are wary, I see, as you are rich; but it remains to be seen whether you can come the buccaneer over a youngster, such as I am."

I had been recommended to a certain lodging-house, and I now proceeded there. It was kept by a Creole miss, and she received me with the drawled out tokens of satisfaction usually shown by these accommodating ladies to their moneyed customers. She provided a tolerable good dinner that day, of which several lodgers partook, as well as myself, and afterwards I went to the theatre, to witness the performance of an American company, which had recently arrived, from New York, to display their theatrical talents to the community of Kingston. The professed amateur of dramatic performances would have derived no pleasure from seeing and hearing Macbeth consult the weird sisters, in the way I now saw and heard this ceremony managed; but to a youth like myself, who had never witnessed anything more theatrical than Punch and Judy, as they are exhibited about the country throughout England, even the acting of this, perhaps the worst strolling company of the United States, could not fail of being entertaining, and I was vastly amused by it. I also derived pleasure from beholding the costly, and some of them, fantastic dresses, worn by slaves present at this exhibition; but the sight in no manner surprised me; for in Jamaica, the people then denominated slaves, and since that time apprentices, have long enjoyed the sweets of the soil, while many of the proprietors of land, at whose charge it is cultivated, perish, worn out by anxiety, in a state of bankruptcy. However, what I witnessed on that occasion was a bagatelle compared with what had taken place a few nights previous at Spanish Town, where the slaves gave a ball, at which ices, and every other luxury that money could produce, were introduced; together with a plum cake of extraordinary dimensions, and six feet in height. There was scarcely a negro in the room whose dress had not cost at least five pounds; while some of the more fanciful of these gentry, more especially among the females, had expended from thirty to fifty pounds upon theirs; this extravagance, however, will not be thought surprising by those who know that a negro can earn five shillings per diem by picking coffee, a task about equal to that of gathering cherries in England. The negro looks with contempt upon a white pedestrian—a walking buckra, as he calls him; and still with greater upon the sailor of a merchant ship; and well may he do so, for when he himself works aboard ship, he gets threefold the wages of that slave. The merry negro laughs, too, at the British soldier eating his ration of salt meat, in a country abounding with cattle of all kinds; and who is enlightened enough to tell whether the aforesaid ration is issued for the benefit of the home contractor, or to give the soldier an additional zest for the new rum of the country?

When I waited upon Captain Robertson in the morning, he behaved to me even more courteously than at parting the night before, and telling me his breakfast would soon be ready, insisted on my staying to partake of it. At this meal, the shrewd captain affected to open his heart to me; and, well knowing the nature of his own species, he baited the lure of deceit, with personal flattery,

and the promise of aggrandisement. I was a fine handsome young fellow, he said, the very counterpart of a favourite nephew of his, who had been lost at sea, in the Guinea trade; and, provided I did every thing he wished of me, and served him faithfully on all occasions, he would adopt me in his place; for he had no child of his own, nor any young relative he wished to provide for. This apparently was a golden opportunity for the child of Diana Winpenny, and he possessed too large a share of worldly wisdom, to allow of its passing by without returning abundant expressions of thanks to the promiser of so many advantages; in short, matters were now so well understood between us, that after we had done breakfast, and he had given me the cue how to behave myself, the captain took me to the house of his relative—the evangelical gentleman, with the carbuncled nose, and introduced me to him as a youth who had come strongly recommended to him from England, and whom he purposed taking under his own care.

This preacher of the Gospel was one of those officious persons who never let slip an opportunity for trumpeting forth their own godliness. Accordingly, he seized on this occasion for sermonizing me on the sweets of a religious life, and the grateful duty I should owe my beneficent protector; telling me, in conclusion, especially to observe all good precepts, read holy works, and implicitly follow the orders of the worthy Christian who had taken me under his paternal care; for that the youth who is well trained, never forsakes the path he should go.

Like an apt scholar, I listened with much seeming attention to all the foregoing, and a vast deal more such cant, dealt out in profusion, but with puritanical precision, from the mouth of this teacher of the doctrines of Christianity; for well did even I know, that attentive auditors make contented preachers, while that to preach and to listen is the main business of the two; inasmuch as the conduct of both the parties almost invariably prove, that they neither of them care anything about following the doctrine inculcated, however dogmatic and orthodox it may be.

My conduct on this occasion evidently was gratifying to the lecturer, as, in summing up what he had to say, he was pleased to signify that I was a grave, promising youth, endowed with a sprinkling of grace; one, in short, of whose welfare on earth, and salvation hereafter, he entertained no faint hopes.

No man can compete with a professed swindler in professions of honesty; and to judge by the same standard, the most eloquent preachers are the most arrant impostors. For his part, Captain Robertson affected to receive as so much unerring gospel all that his relative had said; and, consequently, now looked on me with the soft beaming eyes of complacency; but I, though not yet out of my noviciate in worldly matters, inwardly laughed at them both, and recollecting Diana Winpenny's advice, said to myself, while their attention was otherwise diverted, "Yes, ye pair of sanctified old rogues, never doubt it; the boy before you has been trained in the way he will go."

CHAPTER XVII.

" Oh, who can tell, save he whose heart hath tried,
And danced in triumph o'er the waters wide,
The exulting sense—the pulse's maddening play,
That thrills the wanderer of that trackless way?"

" Have I once lived to see two honest men?"

THE Creole miss, my hostess, who in her short career had been cruelly duped by two or three itinerant preachers, was no advocate of the Methodist persuasion, and, finding this to be the case, I ventured to question her regarding my new patron's brother-in-law, whose name I forbear mentioning; though, to avow the truth, not out of regard to the reverend gentleman himself, but in mercy to the feelings of well-meaning persons belonging to the Anti-Slavery Society, as they would be sadly put to the blush were I to make known this man's name to the world.

The lady unhesitatingly told me that she knew him to be a sad wretch, yet that he was so wary, that there was no possibility of getting him convicted of any one of his crimes in a criminal court; besides, the slave population, she said, looked upon him as a saint, and would not suffer a word to be spoken to his disadvantage.

For her part, she added, it was impossible he could again deceive her, so greatly had her family suffered from his rascality. Her sister Julia, for example, had been seduced by and borne a child to this parson, who shortly afterwards not only forsook her, but gave out that a sea captain had been poor Julia's seducer. Yet, what still more grieved her was, his having so worked upon the feelings of her mother by alternate threats of punishment and promises of rewards in a future state, that to mollify his heart, and ensure, as she thought, a good berth above, the old lady, shortly before her death, and unknown to her family, had made a will, bequeathing to this man the best part of her little property, which he had inhumanly seized upon. He had a wife and a family of children in England, she said, and yet that she knew of no less than four Kingston girls whom he had seduced and forsaken; besides which, he kept a young black mistress, whom he passed off as his housekeeper.

A novice in the knowledge of these sort of evangelical characters might have imagined my fair hostess to have been actuated by prejudice, when she complained in this manner; but truths force conviction, and, for my own part, I verily believe she spoke nothing more than the truth; yet she charged the reverend gentleman with

being an impostor, who made his God's name a tool to work with, and bartered away the Bibles, Testaments, and tracts sent to him to distribute, in exchange for marketable goods, such as pigs, poultry, vegetables and fish. With this divine and Captain Robertson I was now honoured by dining every day, and from being myself constantly on the watch to glean information, I found out that the captain had recently freighted several vessels with goods to this island, which had been disposed of, and he had taken bills of exchange upon mercantile houses at New York for the amount of the sales. His business here being all done, the captain became anxious to get back to Porto Rico, for the time was fast approaching when the slave ship he expected home might arrive from the coast of Guinea; accordingly, that time might not be lost, as there was no vessel at Kingston bound to Porto Rico, he agreed for his passage and mine in a Bermudian trader, bound to St. Thomas's, from whence we could cross to Porto Rico any day we pleased.

All was got ready for our voyage, and the sea stock had already been shipped, when, from my having suspected something wrong in their intentions, and at a time when they believed me to be employed elsewhere, I happily placed myself in a closet adjoining the chamber of conference of the two relatives, my professed friends, and here I heard amply sufficient to put me on my guard against their machinations for my ruin.

The parson it was who first touched on the theme so interesting to me, which he did by saying, that the safest way to ensure silence of one who knew too much, was to set his tongue at rest in the silence of death; when the captain, encouraged by this hint, said the *youth* was now off his guard, and therefore might be let live for a time, and if his services were required, sent on a voyage or two to Africa, where most likely he would die; but provided he did not, there would be ways enough to dispose of him. Here the preacher, with a compliment or two to the other's sagacity, declared that no man knew better than himself what it was incumbent on him to do; nevertheless, that the wisest men sometimes erred, and for his own part, he thought the sooner a dangerous evidence was sent to his resting place, the better it was for the mind's peace, as well as the body's security.

There was at all times a something ominously imposing in this clerical gentleman's manner and words, but now both were so much more impressive than I had ever before witnessed them to be, that I was not in the least surprised to find Robertson was moved by his friend's arguments to alter his sentiments regarding me, and made to avow, that he would take an early opportunity of ridding himself of *the youth.*

Here the conference terminated, and the two relatives, much to my satisfaction, took up their hats and went out of doors; when, judging they would go on board the vessel, I hastened there as fast as I could, and so contrived, that when they arrived on board, they found me busily engaged over-looking our stores.

There is nothing like cheating the devil: both the gentlemen bestowed commendations on me for my zeal; and I, satisfied of the value of their praises, failed not to return due thanks for the same; yet in my heart I felt satisfied the youth was trained in the way he would go; while that, wily as these confederates were, still he would contrive to come the buccaneer over them.

My conduct on this occasion was so satisfactory, that this being the last day of our stay, the parson was pleased, after our dinner, to take me along with the captain, to pass the evening with a wealthy member of his flock. Here I should observe, as we found some Jews were of the party, that no monopolizer of tithes, however illiberal might be his sentiments, could show more rancour against the Jewish religion than Robertson's relative always did; but then, like many such illiberal characters, he was narrow minded and most prejudiced. He, however, could preach about crucifying his natural feelings, and debasing himself before men; but he was too stubborn to do so.

Our Methodist parson, who was grieved to think that in Jamaica the Jewish citizens enjoy every privilege to which their worth as men, and their tolerating spirit towards other religions fully entitle them, could not forbear from showing his envious spirit, by insulting the Hebrew gentlemen, who had come here for the purpose of conviviality, and not that of dispute; till at length, highly to my delight, an elderly bearded Jew—a rabbi I believe he was—silenced the troublesome preacher by putting the following interrogatories to him:—"You are extremely free in your abuse of our religion, but do you know, learned sir, that Jesus Christ was a Jew; that he was born, lived, and died a Jew; that, as a Jew, he celebrated the Passover in the full moon; that all his apostles were Jews; that after his death, they went into the Jewish temple, as is expressly written; and that the fifteen first secret bishops of Jerusalem were Jews?" Without any other memorable event intervening, Captain Robertson and I embarked in the Bermudian vessel, and his reverend friend had the complaisance to accompany us on board. He sailed with us to the mouth of the harbour, when, after cautioning my protector not to be unmindful of his advice, he departed in a shore boat to land at Port Royal, where he had a conference to hold with several elders of his church.

The Bermudian captains trading between the West India Islands are experienced seamen, who know how to make the most of the trade winds, as also the properest time to get into port to escape those hurricanes which too frequently sweep every sail from those seas. Our captain steered his course for the north side of St. Domingo, that he might have the wide Atlantic to work his schooner in, and where, by steering a degree or two to the northward, a little variation from the trade wind is usually found. We continued tacking about here for twelve days, from the time of quitting Jamaica, during which we caught an abundance of fine fish, among which may be enumerated the king fish and the dolphin: we also

hooked a large shark, and speared two porpoises, which last, contrary to the prejudices of most British seamen, we found to be good eating, the liver tasting like pig meat and the flesh not unlike beef.

Here I should mention, that my patron, as I suppose, the more effectually to throw me off my guard, now invariably called me his nephew; no matter whether speaking of me to others, or personally addressing myself; the consequence of which was, that every person of the crew believed me to be his nephew.

Great events not unfrequently originate from trivial causes. Neither Robertson, nor any other person, not possessing the power of divination, could possibly have foreseen, or even conjectured, that the appellation bestowed on me by this gentleman, when calling me "his nephew," would prove a great means of facilitating my success in getting possession of much unlooked-for wealth: to explain this, I must premise the story by mentioning, that many experienced mariners, who have voyaged in the tropics, pronounce that fish which have been exposed during the night, to have the moon shine upon them, consequently become poisonous; but whether this assertion is grounded upon fact, I shall not presume to decide, although to judge from what I have now to relate, it may well be believed as a truth.

We had been fourteen days at sea in the Bermudian schooner, "the Lovely Lass" beating to windward the whole of the time, when Captain Robertson, who, it should be observed, was much of an epicure, and remarkably fond of that great delicacy, the king fish, requested of our skipper to have a slice of one which had been taken on the preceding day cooked for his dinner, and according to his desire this was done, and my patron ate extremely hearty of it; but an hour or two afterwards, he was taken dreadfully ill with a retching of a violent nature, which nothing we had on board could stop or allay.

It was conjectured that the captain had been poisoned by the king fish, of which no other person on board had eaten freely; but several who partook of it in a more moderate way, were more or less suffering from the same poison, and every body now called to mind the circumstance of the fish having been hung up during the whole of the preceding night, with a full moon shining upon it. In defiance of all we could do for him, poor Robertson's sufferings kept on increasing; the poison seemed to work upon him in the manner that arsenic does. He endured dreadful torment; but at last, seeing all was in vain that we could do for him, and that death was inevitable, he, with a promptness of decision, always remarkable in his character, resolved on the latest act of his life. Having ordered every one out of the cabin except the captain, he directed him to write what he dictated; which being done, two of the crew were brought in to witness his signature to the document; he then desired the skipper to clear the cabin, and let me alone be with him, when, on our being closetted together, the poor gentleman spoke as follows:—"He who has but a few minutes to live has nothing to dissemble. I have been a great sinner, who cloaked his

crimes under the cloak of religion; but I now abominate those who were associated with me in the Satanic deception. However, Andrew," added he, sighing most grievously, "I feel that I am dying; so, to the point. I have a wife and children in Europe, but there is ample wealth there for them; therefore, as I loathe my late associates, and none more than my deceitful brother-in-law, who advised me to make away with you, I have left you the sole heir to all I possess in this quarter. There is the will," concluded he, giving me the newly written paper; "but be cautious—hasten away with your money to a safer quarter, for soon will it be discovered that you are not my nephew, and every possible effort will be resorted to to dispossess you of the inheritance."

The poison had done its work: my benefactor could say no more, but gently waving his hand to the Bermudian captain, who at this moment entered the cabin, and pointing towards me and the will displayed in my hand, as if in the way of appeal to him to see justice done to me, he fell back on his pillow, and presently, with a great groan, yielded up the ghost.

CHAPTER XVIII.

"'Tis trick and trickery makes all crafts to thrive;
Starts interests new, and (like the laudanum dose)
Sets the poor dupe asleep! Your governors,
Directors, managers, and other knaves
Who thrive on ill-got wealth, laugh in the sleeve
At those who pay them."

NECESSITY is a stern tyrant. Even the great debt of gratitude I owed my benefactor, in return for the affluence he had so unexpectedly bestowed on me, could not avert the harsh decree of necessity: there was no alternative, the body could not be preserved for interment on shore, and I was obliged to consent that my *soi-disant* uncle should be cast into the ocean—a ceremony which was performed with a double-headed shot, enclosed in each end of the hammock wherein was his corpse.

The Burmudian captain, who was an honest, straight-forward sort of a man, used his best efforts to console me for the untimely death of my uncle; while I, to play the nephew's part, put on the appearance of greater sorrows than I really felt. However, although until very recently I had lived in dread of Robertson, and that I well knew him to be a most dangerous, wicked character, yet now, his testament made in my favour, had so thoroughly changed my sentiments regarding him, that I respected his memory, and felt grief at his lamentable end. By his death, too, I had been taught a good

moral lesson for all grovellers after unnecessary riches—namely, that of seeing the small importance they attach to them in their dying moments; and I had also by that event been made more sensible than heretofore of the inscrutable ways of Providence, which had permitted Robertson to go on in a long, prosperous career of aggravated crime, and for what, as far as I could perceive, but to make Andrew Winpenny, a youth until recently unnoticed by him, heir to his ill-gained wealth.

I lost no time in possessing myself of my benefactor's writing-desk, and what small packages were at hand, and two days after his death, the schooner reached St. Thomas's, when the captain, to whom I presented a good bonus for his services, acted the part of a man of honour, by delivering up to me every thing on board belonging to the deceased gentleman's estate. At the time of that event, I much regretted the necessity of consigning Robertson's body to the deep; but after my arrival here, I found it was the happiest disposal of him that could have taken place, as, had I brought his remains to this island, the Danish lawyers would have sifted into the particulars of my declared relationship, and obtained possession of all the property of Robertson's estate within the Danish rule, most likely for ever, as I never could have satisfied the Danish laws and their greedy lawyers on this delicate subject. Indeed, such is the law's rapacity, that, as in some other states, poverty is the only safeguard for those persons who mix with the legal tribe, and I had not been forty-eight hours ashore at St. Thomas's, when an Englishman, settled there as a merchant, and who knew something of what was in contemplation, advised me to depart the isle without beat of drum, which accordingly I did, with bag and baggage, in a Spanish fishing-boat, which sailed immediately I got on board for St. Juan, Porto Rico. The passage is but a few miles across the ocean from one of these islands to the other, and the trade-wind favouring, we were soon harboured in safety at St. Juan, where I proceeded forthwith to the lodging-house of my former hostess, Mademoiselle Delisle, who expressed herself delighted to see me once more, and, at my desire, deposited my baggage in a safe store-room. The good lady proved very inquisitive; she put a thousand questions to me; but Robertson's advice, and the danger I had been in from Danish lawyers, served to make me cautious, and I gave her no more information in return for her questions than what I deemed safe for myself; but I communicated the story of our shipwreck, which much shocked the feelings of the tender-hearted female, and many tears fell from her eyes at the recital.

From Mademoiselle Delisle I learnt that the captain of our slaver was absent from Porto Rico, on a voyage to the coast of Guinea, to procure a fresh living cargo; and a day or two after my arrival, my new friend Jenkinson, whose advice had so essentially befriended me, crossed over by appointment from St. Thomas's to Porto Rico, to consult with me as to the best mode of proceeding in the manage-

ment of my affairs. Jenkinson, I should observe, bears a very high character, both for probity and his great knowledge of mercantile business; and knowing a half confidence to be no confidence, I candidly communicated to him all my story. The intelligent merchant, after listening to me with profound attention, and reflecting for some little time on my critical position, counselled me to act by the deceased Robertson's advice, and get away from the West Indies as expeditiously as possible; for otherwise, he said, unprincipled enemies would most likely prove the destruction of me. "For example," added he, "have you not every danger to apprehend from the slaver's captain, when he returns here, and you call upon him for a division of the profits of his voyage? And may not your enemies, to secure to themselves some of your wealth, get you apprehended for piracy, and sent to Jamaica for trial, when assuredly your riches would be an irresistible lure to the great law officers there, and most likely a gibbet at Port Royal Point be the finale of your adventures?"

My friend's advice was excellent; and well knowing that he, in the capacity of my agent, could act far more effectually in my behalf than I could for myself, in a quarter where my person would be in constant danger, while I could command no great respect, from having been known only as a youth in a very subordinate character, I promptly decided on executing and leaving with him a power of attorney, to act for me in recovering all and every description of property he could under the will of my supposed uncle, and of myself departing forthwith to the United States of America, there to await in security the result of his endeavours.

The resolve once made, no time was lost by me in executing a power of attorney, whereby I gave the same powers to my confidant to act in my behalf as I myself possessed; and having furnished him with this document, together with a certified copy of my uncle's will, of which I took probate in Porto Rico, and also a letter of general instructions, I engaged my passage in a vessel bound for New York, on board of which Mr. Jenkinson and Mademoiselle Delisle saw me with my bag and baggage safely embarked; and the wind proving fair, the brig was well away on her voyage, indeed almost out of sight of the land in little more than two hours from the time of my taking leave of these friends of mine.

The vessel I was on board of was named the Joachim; she was an hermaphrodite brig of large dimensions; and as her captain had only three other passengers, neither of whom paid him a price proportionate to what he required for the use of the cabin, he gladly accommodated me with his state-room, in return for the more liberal sum I agreed to give him for my passage-money.

On any other occasion a common berth would have suited my purpose quite as well as this little cabin, but now, for a good reason, I wished to have a place entirely to myself; and this having

a door to it which locked, and being furnished with a table and a chair, suited my purpose to a tittle.

My luggage I got stowed away in my cabin, and as soon as we were fairly out of sight of land, I went below and shut myself up to gratify the furious desire I felt to become acquainted with the actual amount of treasure I had come into the possession of by the demise of my self-constituted uncle, as Mademoiselle Delisle, at Porto Rico, had been too prying into my affairs to allow me a safe opportunity of examining my things, and I was far from desirous of having any one present to witness what I possessed.

It was an enchanting employment, and to this day I think of it with glee, the examining of the contents of Robertson's writing-desk. I found deposited there a great number of gold coins, together with two watches of the same metal, and a variety of diamond and topaz rings. But what most merited my attention—and which by-the-by I was rather slow in finding, for they were stowed away in a secret drawer—were the bills of exchange upon mercantile houses in New York, which the departed gentleman had received in return for the shipments of goods disposed of by him in Kingston.

These bills were well worthy of the search I had to make after them, inasmuch as their amount altogether was for sixty thousand dollars, or, in other words, more than twelve thousand pounds of English money, which, added to the specie I found, amounting to better than four thousand dollars, made an inheritance well worthy of touching; yet, besides this money, I had to thank the captain's memory for abundance of clothes, as well as the watches and rings already mentioned.

"Ah," said I, laughing with self-complacency as I contemplated this treasure, "the youth has been trained in the way he should go."

Having thus far satisfied my curiosity, I re-packed the bills of exchange and what other property I had found in the writing-desk, and carefully locked up the same; but I put off the task of examining my new wardrobe to some more convenient opportunity.

A good-humoured, facetious little fellow, named Grenville, who had recently been a merchant at St. Thomas's, and two Irish gentlemen on their return from Mexico, where they had been employed with the title of *managers* to superintend a mining concern, were the other passengers on board the Joachim.

The Hibernian gentlemen were great talkers. By their boasting it came out, that, by means of their own great assurance, they had obtained the appointments they held under a company of persons in England, who, having more money than sane brains, had embarked a vast deal of the former in a mining concern, the projectors of which had promised them to procure gold in such abundance in Mexico, that it should be sent home by ship loads at a time.

The projectors of this laudable speculation, it seems, had procured the two Irish gentlemen expressly that they might act the part of puffers, and consequently they had been at the trouble of having them schooled to know all the names of things, as also the terms of art used in every branch of mining; when, as soon as all this knowledge was attained, as the heroes had long before gained a conquest over their modesty, they talked so very learnedly, and made such great promises, that they not only satisfied the minds of the capitalists engaged in the concern as to their ability, but made them rejoice at having two such able persons to send out as their confidential agents to South America.

The Hibernians had implicitly obeyed the *private* orders of the nefarious projectors of this concern, and they were now on their way home to explain to their simple capitalists the necessity of raising another loan of money before they could clear the mine of water, and effectually get at the gold there. But for the satisfaction of the mine proprietors, who thereby would get the shares up in price, they carried home with them several beautiful specimens of gold in the crude state, which, they said, had come out of their mine.

Man is a sad scheming animal. Over the bottle one night, when they were more than half tipsy, Grenville, who knew well how to worm secrets from characters of this sort, got one of these adventurers to admit that they had purchased the samples of gold they carried with them; and, moreover, that not a tithe of the money subscribed by their employers had ever been spent in attempts to work their mine.

In short, it was made evident by what this man said, that the mine was little better than an imaginary thing, but by means of which the projectors trusted they should be successful in mining the pockets of the shareholders.

After a pleasant passage of fifteen days, we entered the beautiful bay of New York, which is said to be second in magnificence only to that of Naples. Having come from the West Indies, we were detained a short time at the quarantine ground, but on the following morning we disembarked at the spacious city of New York—the mart of commerce. With all its advantages, however, it labours under two great disadvantages—the first is the want of pure fresh water; the second, the great variableness of its climate, which not unfrequently changes more than twenty degrees in one day.

The four passengers arrived in the Joachim put up at that famous inn and boarding-house the City Hotel, where for ten dollars a week, any decently dressed person may be lodged and boarded better than many princes are housed and feasted when in the zenith of their glory. But with all this excellent living there is one custom prevalent here, which in Europe would be thought a most unmannerly one—namely, that of bandying the different dishes about the table for every one to serve himself to what he wants, as

no person at a public table here condescends to help his neighbour to food.

Nearly a hundred people usually dined at this ordinary every day while I was here; but then, it should be observed, that only a small portion of these were lodged in the hotel. At New York it is customary for single men to dine at ordinaries, which in consequence are numerous, and varying in price to suit the pockets of all ranks, from the leading merchant to the humblest clerk.

We met with many remarkable characters at our ordinary, not a few of whom had rendered themselves notorious by their frauds. Indeed, good evidence might have been procured among them of the grand truths inculcated in the preliminary chapter of this work; but I shall not act the part of an informer against people of other countries, it is sufficient that I incontrovertibly establish, to the satisfaction of the impartial part of the community, that the philosophic assertions of the learned sceptic convey nothing more than truth.

Even among the Britons who revelled a part of their time away here, there were characters of whom the vulgar might say "hanging would be too good for them." One of these was a London banker, a superlative villain, who had crossed the wide Atlantic with all the cash in his chest which his unsuspicious customers had intrusted to his keeping. Another, who was, if possible, a still more unprincipled wretch than the banker, had been a famous solicitor in the British metropolis, till at length, having got together several hundred thousand pounds, the purchase and sale-money of estates belonging to his clients, he took advantage of their ignorance of the human character, shown by placing trust in him, and, without beat of drum, marched away with the precious booty. There was also an Englishman here, who, after playing strange pranks in the other three quarters of the world, foolishly defamed his hostess in this quarter, and had been tried, and sentenced to pay a heavy fine for his pains in doing so; when he, preferring his money to all other things in life, got a Commission de Lunatico Inquirendo against himself; but the American jury by their verdict defeated the gentleman's intentions, and left him no other choice than to suffer long years of imprisonment, or be forthcoming with his money, for they most sagaciously decided that he only laboured under the influence of an ungovernable temper.

The foregoing, it will be observed, were persons accustomed to move in a genteel sphere of life; but we had also some ignorant and vulgar Englishmen boarding here; one of whom only will I particularize, which I do in consequence of the novel mode he had taken of realizing a comfortable fortune. This man had recently been a watchman in the metropolis of England, but happening one night to witness an improper intimacy which took place in a churchyard between a senator and a soldier, he turned the adventure so much to his advantage, that he shortly afterwards emigrated here with a

good fortune, supposed to have been extracted from the rich senator's pocket.

The bills of exchange I had upon the merchants at New York were all duly honoured, and in due time I touched the large sum they entitled me to receive; when, having seen all that there was to see at New York and in its vicinity, the love of change of scene got possession of my mind, and I started one morning in the public steam-boat for Philadelphia.

CHAPTER XIX.

"Say, what's nobility, ye gilded train!
Does Nature give it, or can guilt sustain?
Blooms the form fairer, if the birth be high;
Or takes the vital stream a richer dye?
What! though a long patrician line ye claim,
Are nobler souls entail'd upon a name?
Vice levels all, however high or low,
And all the difference but consists in show.
Who asks an alms, or supplicates a place,
Alike is beggar, though in rags or lace;
Alike his country's scandal, and its curse,
Who vends a place, or who purloins a purse."

"'Tis the temptation of the Devil
That makes all human actions evil:
For saints may do the same things by
The Spirit in sincerity,
Which other men are tempted to,
And at the Devil's instance do."

An American steam-ship, with her passengers on board, furnishes a good epitome of human life.

Among the heterogeneous mixture of nearly three hundred persons we had on board, was the President of the United States; a man, like all his predecessors, worthy of the high and honourable situation his discerning countrymen had appointed him to fill; one or two of the members of his council were also embarked with us; but here the taint of aristocracy is mixed up with the constitution, and it is to be apprehended, that unless the fulsome term *honourable* be detached from the names of those who fill this office, that the taint will spread into vile corruption, till the land has become accursed by the burden inseparable from a real aristocracy of title.

Two venerable personages, in the garb of Quakers, seated themselves near me, and entered into a dissertation on politics, when the youngest observed, that the American constitution was a happy one, but he feared not doomed to continue so, for that the different governments scattered over the world had invariably began by being republics, and ended by becoming monarchies; as some ambitious wretch always arose to rob his country people of their rights, by seizing upon the sovereign power and basely enslaving them.

To this the elder citizen made reply, that in the ignorant ages these misfortunes had visited the people in all quarters; but now, he said, that the people were wiser than in older times, and instructed by the press, in countries where the institutions were just and sound, as with them, there need not be any fears entertained of such a lamentable result. The past, he added, so far from auguring bad for the future, as the partisans of royalty would infer, was the best guarantee they could have against danger; and this, inasmuch as no class of men knowing anything of history, could be so depraved, or so blind, as to give ear to any upstart who would impose on them an aristocracy and a national church, to be paid and upheld by all classes of the community.

The Quaker who had first spoken on politics again expressed doubts as to the probable durability of their government, whereupon the most venerable of the two resumed as follows:—

"The United States of America have profited by the errors of old-established governments, and, therefore, keep themselves free from debt, and the grievous taxation it occasions; but royalty is incompatible to cheap government, and creates a continued inroad on the people's liberty and property. It requires to be upheld by a long list of pensioners, and an all-grinding aristocracy; and for these, its bounties to vice are innumerable. The labourers are plundered by every devise, under the head of taxation, to grossly pamper the profligate and the idle. In short, steam itself is nothing to it. Steam of a million horse-power would not do the work of execution half so effectually as a despotic royalty. Happily, too, the sunshine of America has commenced at an auspicious hour; and it is reserved for us to be a religious people, without having to uphold what often is its bane—a *national* religion. Our constitution is excellently framed; it makes the various states of the Union serve as checks upon each other, and compels the government to be economical—perhaps the most difficult point to be obtained. Then, again, the division of property between children is beneficial, for it adds to the respectability of the middle classes; whereas, what is the law of primogeniture in some kingdoms but a state devise for upholding one great personage at the head of a wealthy family, while the younger branches eat the bread of idleness, as pensioners or placemen. Our criminal laws also are excellent, for by them justice is promptly administered; and although our judges are exempt from their labours only on the Sabbath, so honourable is public employ

deemed in a well-governed republic, that they think themselves well remunerated by salaries of fewer hundreds of dollars than conspiring judges, who sit in judgment only occasionally, receive in pounds sterling, where wide-spreading corruption taints the entire land. But royalty," added this republican citizen, after having paused for some time, "royalty is an expensive government; for what is a king without an aristocracy and a priesthood? and what are any of these unless supported in splendour and magnificence? It is a system in which men are sought to be governed by appearances, and the senses rather than the understanding, and is more adapted to a barbarous than a civilized state. Pageantry and ceremony, the parade of crowns, coronations, and coronets—of gold keys, sticks, white wands, and black rods—of maces, lawn, and ermine, and of horsehair wigs—these are the chief attributes of monarchy. When men become enlightened, they cease to inspire respect, for the real object of government is to confer the greatest happiness on the public at the least expense; and it is, therefore, a beggarly greatness—an absurd system that would perpetuate these tom-fooleries amidst an impoverished population—amidst never-to-be-paid debts, all-grinding taxation, and frightful wide-spreading pauperism."

"The language of truth, uttered from the lips of reason, must carry conviction," said the junior Quaker, "and I see that the pageantry of a court, and the prodigal expenditure in equipages, high living, and in all divisible ways, of those who frequent it, must indirectly be paid by the toiling community; as likewise must the martial troops, the army of policemen, and the unnumbered spies which it entails as essential to its pomp and grandeur."

Thus reasoned the gentlemen with the broad-brimmed hats; for so very ignorant were they on some points, although extremely enlightened on others—as, for example, traffic in all branches—that they knew not that many things which sound remarkably well as *precepts*, have been exploded in *practice*, even from the time when the first of the Ptolemies reigned over Egypt; and, probably, to judge from their ignorance of the blessings of royalty, and the many good gleanings to be picked up under that form of government, they took the ground-work of their reasoning from some old barbarous history.

From political matters the conversation was now turned upon the news of the day, when our two friends deplored the sad circumstance of there being *pirate* vessels afloat in their neighbouring seas; which, they said, most assuredly there were, as many ships had recently been lost, which were unaccounted for by shipwreck or otherwise. Of these they specified no less than six, in which list, not a little to my confusion, was the Columbine, as also the Carthagena packet, which Captain Quirorga pillaged and scuttled.

The eldest Quaker, seeing I was interested in the conversation, and, mistaking me for an innocent youth about terminating his edu-

cation, good-naturedly observed to me, that pirates, after the aristocracy and the stipended national church they had been talking of, were the greatest thieves and scourges mankind could be afflicted with; and he added, that he trusted it would always be my good fortune to steer clear of the whole three.

I always possessed much self-command; yet I could not forbear laughing at the worthy gentleman's comparisons, and, telling him I felt thankful for his good wishes towards me, and would endeavour to steer my course in life clear of the dreadful rocks he had pointed out, I made my bow, and proceeded to a remote quarter of the deck; for really I was afraid that in some way I should be discovered, if I staid longer with such shrewd observers of mankind as were these Quakers.

The journey between New York and Philadelphia, though an affair of only ten hours' duration, is remarkable for being made in two steam-vessels, and the voyagers having to travel by coach a distance of six or eight miles midway from one of these vessels to the other, that is, from the North River to the Delaware, by which the traveller reaches the last city.

There are two ways of voyaging between these places; one is by Burdenton, the town wherein Joseph Bonaparte long resided, and freely expended a part of that large fortune his labour never earned; the other road is by the way of Trenton. This it was by which I passed; and at the time in question there resided there a more philanthropic man than ever was Joseph Bonaparte, or than were the whole of the Bonapartes clubbed together. This man, to the shame of both the new and the old world, lived there in all the squalid misery of poverty. He was housed, it is true, but he was without a chair or a table in his house. If shame is more than an idle name, surely the managers of school and missionary societies, who waste money in pulling down and erecting buildings at pleasure, will blush when this great man's name is mentioned—it is Joseph Lancaster!

We arrived at Philadelphia in good time for dinner, and after enjoying an excellent one at the States' Hotel, I sallied forth to perambulate the town, in doing which I could not fail admiring the great regularity with which that enlightened citizen of the world, the philanthropic founder of this great city, laid out its public streets. The city stands between the Delaware and the Schuylkill rivers, which are about three miles apart from each other, and the streets, which cross from one to the other, are at uniform distances, and in lines exactly parallel; while they are named, not from fulsome flattery after men or their battles, but by the names of trees. The streets which intersect the foregoing, and constitute the remainder of the town, are also all of them parallel to, and at equal distances from, each other, and are numbered First-street, Second-street, and so on to the completion of the number.

William Penn, as every body knows, was a Quaker, and no one

707503

diutess his having been a good man; yet his conscience never rose in judgment against him for employing slaves. He was a peaceable man, quite unlike the Quakers of the present day, who are, too many of them, a brawling, selfish, hard-dealing race, with whom even a Jew pedlar can have no chance of making an advantageous bargain. At the period I am speaking of, the public tranquillity was dreadfully disturbed by this race, who had split into factions among themselves, and were frequently to be seen fighting with each other in the public streets. They furnish bad examples as citizens and men, but perhaps are useful, to show that no other religion than that of adoring God, and acting justly towards man, is called for in this world.

The most remarkable character at this time in Philadelphia was Mr. Gerard, a Frenchman, who had emigrated in his youth, and, without a friend or any money, commenced his career as a sailor boy; but, by the force of industry, prudence, economy, and mercantile speculations, he at this period had risen to be the wealthiest private man probably in the whole world. He was an eccentric character, of whom almost innumerable droll anecdotes are related; but, though he knew his own species well, he would place no uncalled-for trust in the honesty of the Gospel-mongers of the times in which he lived. The great proof of which was afforded after his death; for, although he bequeathed four millions of pounds in sterling money to the city of Philadelphia, to be laid out in improvements and the endowing of a college, this unprecedented munificent bequest was made subject to an illiberal condition, namely, that no clergyman of any religious persuasion whatever should ever be entrusted with the management of a single shilling of the money; for he was of that poet's opinion, who thought "that priests of all religions are the same."

The long suspension bridges, covered over with timber from one extremity to the other for the accommodation of passengers, of which I had passed over one at Trenton, and now saw another, which traverses the Schuylkill, at Philadelphia, filled my mind with no small astonishment, and made me contemplate, with feelings of admiration, the enterprising spirit of the people of this well-governed republic; the servants of which, alike in the law, the navy, the army, and the state, are well remunerated for their services while they are employed, but afterwards not heavily pensioned to burden the state, or give extra patronage to those persons high in authority.

To conclude.—The profession of religion is an open one in the United States, and therefore it thrives exceedingly; for the clergy *must* live, which makes them conciliate the people. Yet they join with each other here in teazing those persons who go to no place of worship; and who, rather than be continually harassed by a set of parsons, that take especial care of themselves, though they pretend to think of nothing else than the soul's welfare, mostly, after

a time of persecution, to enjoy future peace, pay for a seat in some place of public worship.

Thus preaching is made to flourish here, but the preachers are not *all* of them educated for the pulpit; in proof of which I adduce the circumstance of my having one Sunday attended service at four places of worship, at one of which the sermon was preached by a brown woman, at another by the President's Chaplain, at a third by a seaman, and at the fourth by a cobbler, who bore the imposing title of a bishop; and, inasmuch as he received no wages, and possessed no church patronage, indubitably he approximated closer to the chosen disciples of olden days than all the stipended bishops of modern times. But under the blessed sun, which invigorates and gives life to all in this world, there are only two grand systems of religion—one, is that of good sense and benevolence; the other, malice and hypocrisy.

CHAPTER XIX.

"Throughout that clime the feudal chiefs had gained
Such sway, their youthful monarch hardly reigned;
Now was the hour for faction's rebel growth."

"It was too late to check the wasting brand,
And desolation reaped the famished land;
The torch was lighted, and the flame was spread,
And carnage smiled upon her daily dead."

After spending several months in Philadelphia, I became desirous of seeing more of the world, and with this object in view, as well as to ensure their safety, I exchanged most of my valuables for sterling money; when, having reserved for myself what I thought I might require, I invested fifty thousand dollars in the States' Bank here, at six per cent. interest, and procured good bills of exchange, at ninety days, upon the Barings of London, for two thousand four hundred pounds, being the residue of what I had to spare; for as yet, it should be observed, I had received no money, or even tidings from my agent at St. Thomas's. This business done, by the same merchant's advice who had guided me in it, I enclosed my bills of exchange, in a letter to a celebrated London banker, whom I directed to invest the sum of two thousand pounds in the British Consols, as soon as the aforesaid bills were paid, and to open an account with me in his books for the remaining four hundred pounds. My mind being thus relieved of anxiety respecting my treasure, and I having

heard a great deal of conversation here about the much-celebrated falls of Niagara, came to the determination of visiting them with a party of gentlemen on the eve of journeying there; and from thence I purposed proceeding to Canada, there to take my passage to England.

Accordingly, four of us set off together on this trip, and a delightful journey we made of it to the Falls, travelling the greater part of the way in steam-vessels, for which the rivers, lakes, and canals, so abundant here, afford every facility. Here I might say a great deal concerning these stupendous cataracts, which perhaps form the greatest wonders of the natural world; but any description I could give is uncalled-for, as they have been described a thousand times. It may not be amiss, however, to observe, that the rocks upholding the immense bed of water are found to be wearing away, insomuch, indeed, that the Great Leap is thirty yards further up the country than it was twenty or thirty years ago; and, as the rocks forming the bed of the river, from the Rapids upwards, are of a softer nature than at the Falls, they consequently are the less able to resist the action of the current.

Speculative people, from the foregoing causes, may set themselves to work in calculating the time when the bed of the river will be washed away to a level with the bottom of Lake Erie; for then its waters, together with those of the upper lakes, will escape so rapidly, that Ontario must overflow its banks, Lower Canada and the northern parts of the States of America be completely laid waste under water, and the Gulf of St. Lawrence turned into another channel.

The sight is a most beautiful one, to stand on the Canadian shore, at the elevation of a hundred feet or more from the bed of the river, and see the vast clouds of white foam ascending high in the air, sometimes tinged with variegated colours caused by the last rays of the setting sun, long after it has ceased to illumine the dark expanse beneath. There are, also, at irregular distances, shelving rocks, which appear to have been made of more durable stuff, and which run completely across the river, forming numerous embankments, over which the waters roll and tumble with terrific fury. These Rapids continue battling with the current to the very brink of the Great Leap, a distance of more than a mile, and are divided by Goat Island, a small island whose foundations may truly be said to be laid in the deep. A handsome bridge, about one hundred and fifty yards in length, from the centre arch of which you have a beautiful view of the Rapids, both up and down the river, connects it with the village of Manchester. This island, by dividing the river, makes two separate falls, but by far the largest portion of the waters goes down the Canada side; and by far the finest view of the Falls is from this side, for here you have both the Horse-shoe and the American Fall at once before you. This last-mentioned is a most beautiful sheet of water, well worthy to hold the rank of the second wonder in the world of the kind, although not to be compared in grandeur and sublimity with the other. It is about two

hundred yards in breadth, and either from its rocky bed being composed of harder materials, or from the greater weight of water coming down the British side, and wearing away that channel more rapidly, it is about twenty feet higher than the Horse-shoe. It does not fall into a gulf or caldron as the other does, but amongst huge rocks, where it dashes itself into an ocean of foam, and then rushes with tremendous velocity to join its former companion. The body of waters around here are truly awful; the beholder has reflected before him, on a fine day, when the sun shines full on the cascade, a succession of the most beautiful prismatic colours that can be imagined; it is altogether a lively scene, which, once seen, can never be forgotten.

One of my companions, who was a clergyman of middle age and most staid manners, was walking with me looking at the majestic Falls, when we met an Indian and his family, who, it appeared, were on their return home from Quebec, where they had been to barter away their furs with the English; and as this chief, for such he proved to be, could speak our language, we were enabled to enter into conversation with him; when one of the first questions the parson put to the warrior was, to be informed whether or not he was a Christian.

"A Christian," replied he, "no; I am of my own religion; why should you wish me to be that of another man?"

This reply, short as it was, made the clergyman reflect within himself for a brief space; and then he said, "You have your own God, and your own law, I presume." "Yes," rejoined the Indian, with an unmoved manner and firm voice, pointing to the heavens; "my God is there;" and, putting his hand upon his heart, "my law is here."

The parson stared with amazement, but I turning to him said, "Religion, perhaps, is a matter of opinion more than of the understanding, for it seems pure unsophisticated nature knows more than all the doctors of divinity in the world."

The warrior was accompanied by his squaw; two sons verging towards manhood; and a daughter, a fine girl of about sixteen. From his discourse, it appeared that he had left behind him his other daughter, a lass of seventeen, to pass away the winter at Quebec with a young British officer, who, entirely with her approbation, had solicited of her father to leave her there with him; while this parent possessed too great a share of paternal affection to refuse this little gratification to a favourite daughter, and too high a spirit of *that* honour on which the North American savages pride themselves, to refuse to an avowed friend so simple a request; which, moreover, was held to be complimentary on both sides.

The clergyman betrayed tokens of surprise on hearing the Indian chief's ingenuous confession; and he made an observation, implying that the young woman's conduct was sinful, and contrary to the spirit of Christianity; but the chief, who had calmly listened to him, replied, that his forefathers had held it as their opinion, that

the best religions and the wisest men, were those which fostered the fewest prejudices; and that for his part, he considered no one was warranted in interfering with other free persons in their enjoyment of natural rights, more than they would be in dictating to them what they should eat at their breakfasts, dinners, and suppers.

It would have been ridiculous to have stood balancing opinions any longer with a man who views all our sublime mysteries of the Gospel as so many fables; therefore, to relieve the parson from his dilemma, at not being able to convince a mere savage by the force of his reasoning on divinity, I invited the warrior to adjourn with us to our place of abode, to partake of refreshments.

A North American Indian, though he is of the learned Jesuit's opinion, that "there is no true religion in the world, nor any satisfactory cause why one religion should be more genuine than another," yet is a man well worthy of the name of man. He despises ceremony too much to make use of it; therefore, as the invitation suited his convenience, he and his family walked our way with us, without even replying to my proposition. At our meal, the Indians did ample justice to the entertainment, for although they can fast uncommonly long, yet they can eat voraciously. In fine, they are not people to live by Cornaro's rules. They neither weigh nor measure their quantum of nourishment.

When my guest the warrior had satisfied his appetite, we held some conversation with him respecting the continued warfare carried on by the United States' Government, against one or another of the Indian tribes. "Yes," said the Indian, "*that* nation thirsts after lands which it needs not, and never, while we possess a tract of the extensive country of our forefathers, will its people bring us the calumet of a lasting peace. They deceive us by treacherous promises, and they rob us by means of an overwhelming force. Were they children of the forest, as we are, who live by hunting, their numbers would never have increased so as to require our lands from us; but they are ants, who swarm and generate on the same dirty heap, and yet they have fifty fold more land than they can make use of. They talk of honour, and they violate every principle of it. They came here as interlopers, as vagrants, and as criminals, and now they seize upon our persons, which should be free and respected; and imprison and put us to death for crimes they say we commit, although what we do is no crime by our laws, while we know nothing, nor desire to know anything, of theirs. "They talk too of a Providence, and their missionaries, who appear to us to be a blind set of bigots, astound our ears with unintelligible tales; but they have not the good manners to listen to those we could tell them. Like so many evil geniuses, they stir up strife and hatred wherever they go. But if there is that Providence they say, if our great Monitor is in the Heavens, why is not the calumet of peace brought to us? and why are we not left in quiet possession of the back country, which is now all that remains to us?"

The parson could make no reply to the questions of this leader

of a tribe of persecuted Indians; but the equanimity of this hero himself, who would have defied death in the cruelest shape human ingenuity could inflict it, was not to be shaken by any subject of discourse; and turning to me, he good humouredly asked, how it was that a youth like me, in the bloom of health and the dawn of manhood, could reconcile himself to voluntarily endure the effeminate life of a prisoner, shut up in a pestilential and a smoky city, amongst people whose souls were centred in money, and they consequently incapable of a generous thought.

My eyes quailed before those of the free-souled Indian, while I replied to his heart-searching question. But I now was the master of wealth, which serves as a loadstone to enslave the world, and draw man to the more refined and civilized scenes of multiplied crime. My answer was, that urgent affairs demanded my presence among the busy haunts of men, but that my heart yearned for that enjoyment of liberty of which his more happy stars had destined him to partake, and that yet it might so happen I should shape my course to discover some friendly tribe of his countrymen, to live happily among them.

The pipe of fraternal peace was now smoked by us, and the Indian with his family afterwards proceeded on their journey further into the interior of the beautifully romantic country.

The day following that of our interview with the Indian warrior, our party broke up, two individuals of it to return to Philadelphia, and the clergyman and myself to proceed to Quebec.

It was a fine morning when we started on this new journey. All nature seemed refreshed, and the dew fell drop by drop from the trees of the forest. The wild turkeys were calling to each other from the lofty branches of the oak; the cardinol was expanding his golden plumage to the sun, the woodpecker was sticking his beak at the worms in the bark of trees, and the mocking songster with faint carol was hailing the return of day. We prosecuted our journey through forests of oak and hiccory, from whose stately trees hung a long and shining moss: the wood rang with the loud and melodious note of the red bird, and everywhere the woodpecker was heard, though he could not be seen.

About noon we reached an Indian village, where we found the chief warrior on his death-bed. The hoary chief, weighed down with years, lay indulging the retrospect of the enemies that had fallen into his hands, and triumphing over the recollection of the groans produced by the infliction of slow torture. The only heaven he looked to was an imaginary country beyond the trees, where food would await him without the toils of the chase. The grounds of his hopes of reward were the trophies of his cruelties; and he pointed to the scalps that hung around his wig-wam, charging the youthful warriors present to emulate his deeds, and revenge him of his enemies.

Having refreshed ourselves at his village, we quitted the dying warrior to resume our journey, and when we came to a halt on the

evening, the scene was interesting to an extreme. The bat was then wheeling his flight through the air, and the whip-poor-will was welcoming the approach of darkness; while the sun, which had disappeared among the forests of the west, had not been obscured by a single cloud; but a cooling air shook the foliage of the trees, and the shrill hissing of the locust echoed from the oak. I saw the trees beautifully marked upon the sky behind them, every leaf and branch looking like filigree work, while a breeze was brushing over the grass, and carrying with it the fragrance of the flowers.

My companion, though a little prejudiced by his clerical education, was a man of good understanding and generous sentiments, and while we journeyed together, he edified me by excellent remarks on the Indians and their country. Particularly well do I call to mind some of his observations, when on the morn following our interview with the dying chief, we sat under a cypress, the tallest of the American trees, on the top of which the crane finds a resting place, and the eagle builds her nest. "The original savage," said he, "like the Bedouin Arab, regards with disdain and proud independence all other classes of mankind, but especially those of their own nation who have degraded themselves by taking up their abodes within walls: he moves on slowly and reluctantly, while under no particular impulse. He considers ease as one of the greatest blessings of life, and is not readily roused from it but by the force of some potent passion; yet when moved by hunger to pursue his game, by revenge or hatred to destroy his adversary, or by national honour to engage an enemy, nothing in human nature can exceed the ardour of his exertions. When free from these passions, he conceives it useless and ridiculous to labour more than is necessary to satisfy the few wants that he has; such as to procure fish and game for his food; a wig-wam, which he prefers to a large house, saying the last must be very troublesome; and furs to exchange for spirits, with which to intoxicate himself. The little land appropriated for corn and tobacco is cultivated by the women, for the savage thinks it beneath him to cultivate his rich lands, or to exert any mental talents to become opulent. The same may be said respecting their conversion to Christianity, for which so much money has been cajoled out of the pockets of the credulous by knaves, and by fools who have believed these knaves. It is true a few savages allow themselves to be baptized, and have received a Christian name, but it has been done in the same way; and with similar ideas, as they would (from savage politeness) receive the honour of knighthood, or any other title from their red brethren, as they call Europeans. "Reckless of consequences, the Indian is always governed by the impulse of the moment. He keeps up many of his ancient customs, one of which is that of painting black those prisoners he intends to destroy, and mixing red spots on the black with such as he purposes adopting. He is inferior to what he formerly was, for much of his undaunted boldness has degenerated to submissiveness, and he has acquired no good quality in exchange; indeed, it is a melancholy

truth, that where the Indian tribes admit free intercourse with, and settlement of the Europeans among them, they shrink and melt away to nothing; but those tribes who have more prudently retreated, as the Americanized Indians have advanced, retain the primitive energy of savage warriors."

Thus it was that my companion reasoned, and on viewing the immense tracts of uncultivated country lying contiguous to our road, his kindly feelings would often break out in observations upon the injustice with which the aboriginal tribes of people of this country had been treated; while these remarks not unfrequently led him into dissertations on the fallacy of those political reasoners in Europe, who blindly assert that the human species have a tendency to increase beyond the means given by a boundless Providence for its support. "What dolts, what idiots we must all be," he would say, "to listen to Malthus and such insane writers as he is. What a monstrous absurdity it is to think there is a principle in the economy of Nature, by which population increases beyond the means of support. It is impugning the magnificent designs of the Creator, to call in question his vigilant and ever-sustaining providence. To say that God creates millions of thinking beings, only to put them to death by starvation, is to impeach the grand God of the universe.

"And who is it," he would add, musingly, "that gives vent to these abominations? Is it because eighteen millions of people happen to be spread in Great Britain and Ireland, that these things are uttered? Infamous fallacy! Why the lands of the world have never yet been half peopled. Immense tracts of lands, islands, and even continents, at this time are lying in near their primeval state, with the soil untouched since the beginning of the world. The waste lands could hold the existing population of the earth, and yet not be filled. Canada itself is capable of receiving and maintaining the whole of the people of Europe; while the eighteen millions of the human species belonging to the little islands which have raised such needless alarm, might be transported to the banks of one of the mighty rivers in the United States, and it would hardly be known they had taken up their residence in the country.

"An American writer has said to us, 'send over your entire population, the whole of the people of Europe, for we have plenty of room for you all, and for one hundred millions more.' And, moreover, has not Audobon, the ingenious naturalist, assured us that in the back woods of America he has seen a flight of pigeons so extremely numerous, that by calculating their numbers from the space they filled, he computes, that at half a pint a day each, their food must be eight millions seven hundred and twenty bushels per diem, which, whether by weight or measure, would be sufficient to support the eighteen millions of people of Great Britain for at least a week.

"Bedlam is well stocked with lunatics," the parson would add, "but still room should be found there for Malthus' partisans." Even without their emigrating, without sending a single Englishman from his native land, they might be provided for, and provided for abun-

dantly. Nearly a fifth part of the lands of Great Britain are uncultivated, and the produce of more than three millions of acres is consumed by the keep of horses. Why not, then, cultivate the waste lands, and employ fewer horses? For every twenty thousand of which, thirty thousand fat oxen might be kept. Before the firebrand of rebellion blazed abroad, and the savage-painted Indians, with their tomahawks took the field, prepared for the work of butchery, the sight was a most pleasing one, in passing through Canada, to behold the industrious British settlers, who mostly are neighbourly and kind to each other. They lived blessed with an abundance of food, and were cheerful and happy; but, in the genial seasons of the year, have to toil hard, that they may lay up their winter's supply. This condition of life, with the industrious and the healthy, is perhaps an enviable one; but to the idle and the infirm, it must be quite the contrary. The British Government, shortly before I was here, had expended vast sums in fortifying the unproductive colony, and had acted an impolitic, and many thought it a cruel part, in giving veteran soldiers and sailors a small sum of money each as a commutation for the pensions their services had earned for the poor fellows, and sending them out ostensibly to become settlers in this country. In a few months most of these men had wasted and made away with all their money, when many of them contrived to get back to their native land, to laugh at the Government they had jockeyed, and become paupers on their previously overburdened parishes.

Without any memorable occurrence on the way, my companion and I arrived safe and well at Quebec, highly delighted and instructed by what we had seen.

CHAPTER XX.

" Is love array'd
In threats like these, and thus convey'd?
Go bind the winds, or bid them veer,
The ocean smooth, the earth unsphere;
But seek not love with force or fear!"

" Money has a power above
The stars and fate to manage love;
Whose arrows, learned poets hold,
That never miss, are tipped with gold."

" He turned to pass away,
But the stern stranger motioned him to stay.
A word!—I charge thee stay."

" 'Tis he! how came he thence?—what doth he here?"

My travelling companion and I were so well pleased with each other, that by an agreement entered into on the journey, we now put up at the same hotel, and both of us having come provided with letters of introduction to highly respectable persons, we speedily became known to most of the leading characters in Quebec. However, as my business is to confine myself entirely to the relation of matters requisite to my memoirs, and many were the discontented republican-principled people at this time resident here, I shall avoid entering into any detail of the society I met with, further than to observe, that among the individuals with whom it was our good fortune to get acquainted, was a lady verging towards her fortieth year. She was the widow of a celebrated dealer in furs, who, on one of his excursions in the way of business to the territory of an Indian tribe, foolishly had been induced to take the field with these uncivilized friends of his, on a predatory service against another tribe at war with them, and it was his misfortune in the campaign to get tomahawked and killed; when his heart had been cooked and eaten by the cannibals, his conquerors.

This grievous calamity extremely affected the poor sufferer's relict; insomuch, indeed, that she lost her reason in consequence of it. Time, however, that balmy comforter, which can assuage even a widow's woe, made all things right with her again, and as she was wealthy,

for the fur dealer her husband was reported to have died worth twenty thousand pounds, which in reality he did, the gentle dame, in due course of time, procured many admirers.

The soundes treasoning is that which is demonstrable by facts, therefore, the better to prove the truth of the Jesuit's assertion made in these memoirs, that "education is every thing, and crime cannot be greater than the conscience makes it," I think it incumbent to mention, that shortly after the widow's happy restoration to reason, the Indian chief, whom it was killed her husband, and had had his heart cooked and served up on his board, paid a visit to Quebec; when, on being questioned upon what they called his inhuman conduct, in having feasted on the merchant's heart, this renowned savage, so far from expressing contrition on the occasion, made a merit of what he had done, by telling his questioners, that they would have given the man's heart as food for the worms, but that he had bestowed a more honourable sepulchre on it. Moreover, this great chief, who most appropriately had been christened "the Wolf," and whose name should be passed down to posterity with those of other famed heroes, proved himself on this occasion to be as philanthropic as he was heroic: inasmuch as, when her friends communicated to him the circumstance of his having made a disconsolate widow, by tomahawking the fur merchant, he spontaneously offered the fullest reparation, by taking the lady to himself in place of a squaw of his who had been captured and allotted to one of his party by the Fox, an Indian warrior of a tribe then at war with the tribe of "the Wolf."

The fair widow, it seems, preferred a state of celibacy to a union with this brave and disinterested man, for he was permitted to return home to his native wilds, unaccompanied by her.

In refined life we cannot boast of finding many such magnanimous characters as "the Wolf." He, to make reparation to a woman, a stranger to him, for having killed her husband in fair combat, freely proffered to take the widow to his bosom, to share his all with her, and make her his partner through the vale of life. He, however, who would accuse "the Wolf" of making this offer, because the widow possessed wealth, would wrong him extremely, for this disinterested hero never had heard of, or thought of inquiring into, to him, so trivial a circumstance.

Well would it be for certain quacks, who hasten thousands of their fellow-creatures on the great journey of futurity, to cogitate over the conduct of this generous Indian; and to think whether the great David or the wise Solomon ever had such abundantly stocked harems as they themselves would have, were they to take to their bosoms all the fair widows of their making.

A rich widow, like ripe fruit, is sadly beset by wasps. Madam Chinchilla, at the time of my arrival at Quebec, had already wasted away several valuable years of her life in a state of widowhood; but her professed admirers were at this time numerous, and she had refused many offers of marriage. Report now gave out that she

was on the eve of being united to a Captain Hardsides, a Bostonian, who had realized a considerable fortune by traffic, and dealt largely with the Indians in furs,

Idle report, like character, goes a great way with the world; yet they may both have been engendered by deceit; and, after all, what more is character than the colouring of a picture by interested parties? and what is report, but the offspring of a well-intentioned or a wicked imagination? The philosopher values these fleeting deceivers at a low rate, and he judges of men and of events for himself; but the great body, called the world, too often take these false counters for real coin, and consequently join in blasting the characters of the worthy to please the invidiously base; while, by believing in *report*, they not unfrequently make it the parent of reality. The report now alluded to doubtless had been set afloat by Captain Hardsides and his partisans, and it had spread so generally, that the fair widow was often jeered on the subject of her approaching marriage—for that married she must be to the captain was almost every body's opinion. He was a rough sailor, and, as a Bostonian, one of a race of such hard dealing people, that no Israelite to his time had been able to pick up a livelihood in the town of Boston. How this gentleman had got his money, no person in Quebec save himself could tell, for he had spent his best days away in remote regions, but how or where formed a tale which he never told. For my own part, from all which I heard and what I saw of the man, I could come to no other conclusion than that he had been a buccaneer; while so disagreeable a fellow was he, that in my heart this was the only meritorious thing I could find in him.

Captain Hardsides was an indefatigable gallant. He allowed the widow no rest; but whether it was agreeable to her or otherwise, he would be a visiter at her house. Apparently he was of the Quaker Hilkier's way of thinking, when he says,

> "He that woos a maid, must seldom come in her sight,
> But he that woos a widow, must woo her day and night."

And I make no question, but that eventually his perseverance would have been crowned with the desired success, had it not been for the following circumstances.

Madam Chinchilla, for reasons best known to herself, grew cool in her behaviour towards the captain, almost from the day when I had the honour of becoming known to her; while, for my part, novice as I was in the affairs of gallantry, I yet saw too plainly the many advantages to be attained by securing the affections of a widow lady, with twenty thousand pounds at her disposal, not to exert my best efforts for so laudable a purpose.

The captain, who witnessed my attentions to the widow, and saw that they were most favourably received, while that he and his attentions were ill-requited by her on my account, grew furiously angry; when, in the first instance, instead of striving to gain her over by additional kindnesses, and devising means to lower me in

her estimation, he was insane enough to remonstrate with, and reproach the lady, for her unkindness to him; and also tax her with showing partiality towards a mere boy, as he thought fit to term me.

Madam Chinchilla, by judicious management, possibly might have been soothed into the views of the sturdy sailor, but she was not a lady to be intimidated by his threats. She retorted rather severely upon the veteran gallant, on which he grew still more furious, and the result was that she forbade him her house.

Often have I reflected with astonishment on this part of my history; as who, with one grain of sense, could suppose that a rough old sailor, passed the meridian of life, would attempt by means of blustering to turn a widow woman's heart about like a weathercock, and compel her to give up a young lover, who was pleasing to her, to bestow her person, her wealth, and her affections, upon himself. The Bostonian, whose heart was set upon her wealth, felt highly indignant and mortified at being discarded in an abrupt manner by the widow; but he, being a revengeful man, yet knowing no good was likely to result to him from further altercation with her, determined to bring me to book for the conquest I had made, as he thought, at his expense.

Accordingly, he sent me a message by a friend of his, a naval officer of the United States, calling upon me to resign all pretensions to Madam Chinchilla, or otherwise to meet him, at an appointed spot on the ramparts, at the dawn of the following day, to render the satisfaction due to an injured gentleman. The bearer of the challenge was a blustering fellow, much like the challenger himself, and he thought to intimidate me by his arrogant manner, but I treated him with merited contempt; and being very sensible that there was no alternative in a case of this nature, I abruptly dismissed the naval gentleman, saying I should be punctual to the time and place.

He who has served among buccaneers, never thinks of flinching from fighting a duel, at least where there is no shorter way of getting rid of a foe, and none such did I desire; therefore I provided myself with a second from amongst my coffee-house friends, and armed with an excellent brace of hair-trigger pistols, at the appointed time we proceeded together to the ramparts. Captain Hardsides was a man of business in this way, therefore no superfluous words passed between us; but I won the toss, and so took the first fire.

I was too good a shot to waste ammunition fired at a man only twelve paces distance from me, consequently I saved the captain the necessity of drawing a trigger on this occasion. He fell, the seconds thought, mortally wounded; when I, with an appetite sharpened by the morning air, proceeded to a coffee-house outside the city, to get my breakfast.

The news of this affair spread like wildfire, and, of course, one of the first persons to hear of it was the fair widow. I am told she was absolutely distracted on the occasion, not that she cared a straw about the captain, but from apprehension of the consequences which might arise to me from having killed him.

By the advice of my confidential friends, I staid away in the country for several days after the duel; but, during this time, I was honoured with many kind messages from Madam Chinchilla; when now, the captain, so far from dying of his wound, was announced to have survived the dangerous crisis; and the person who brought me this grateful news was the amiable widow herself.

To a young fellow like myself, it seemed rather a preposterous thing to get tied in wedlock to a lady much older than myself; but twenty thousand pounds outweighed all other considerations, and I now hinted to the fair widow that, after the duel I had fought on her account, I thought marriage was the only way of saving her character from the shafts of scandal; when her sentiments coinciding with what I said, our union was agreed upon.

With fair woman, there is nothing like striking the blow while the iron is hot. I was not in the smallest degree afraid of any change taking place in the widow's sentiments, yet as I thought some officious persons might step forward to talk to her of making a settlement of her property upon herself, or else of a dower, or some other such mercenary arrangement, to deprive me of all control over her wealth, and which might have put a termination to our projected marriage, I told the fair, that to prevent all chance of our happiness being frustrated, I must insist on making it a condition that we returned not to Quebec until after the Hymeneal knot had been tied. She agreed to my proposition, when, at my suggestion, the better to accomplish our purpose, we journeyed to an hotel on the high road, some few miles from the city; meanwhile, my friendly travelling companion the clergyman, to whom I had sent an express on the occasion, procured a licence of marriage, and, on the following morning, accompanied by the gentleman who had officiated as my second in the duel, and another coffee-house acquaintance, whom he brought to be witnesses to the ceremony, the worthy parson celebrated our marriage in a neighbouring chapel.

My duel with the Bostonian captain, and my marriage with Madam Chinchilla, served as a nine days' wonder to the good people of Quebec; but I had now provided an excellent house over my head, and got a large additional fortune placed out at interest, therefore I cared as little regarding the people's opinion, as a sailor, when he has retired to bed on shore, cares which way the wind blows.

The jade Fortune cannot content every body. If I was well pleased, Captain Hardsides was far from being so. He saw his old mistress's happiness and her youthful husband's satisfaction, with sensations of anger and discontent, which increased upon him every day, and served to make him the laughing-stock of those persons who dared to laugh at so formidable a personage.

Money, like manure, is of no utility unless it gets spread. This is a truth, of which, thank my stars, I have always been so thoroughly satisfied, that I have ever lived nearly up to my income, whatever it has been. At this time I lived like a wealthy lord, and

yet, as most things are cheap at Quebec, my expenditure fell materially short of my rental.

My unhappy rival, who probably would have got more reconciled to his disappointment, had he seen me a miserly fellow, incapable of enjoying the wealth I had got possession of, could not contain his feelings of anger at witnessing my lavish profusion, but vented them every day, by reporting, in his vulgar manner among his associates, that I was an extravagant youngster, who would soon bring himself and his wife to a mouthful of bread. Some officious person or other invariably brought his remarks to my ears, but their effect was only that of making me laugh, and becoming more ostentatious in my extravagance.

A duellist, like a game bird, is shy of engaging again in mortal combat with his conqueror; consequently the captain, though he was highly nettled at my behaviour, and would not from any other man have put up with such taunts as I wantonly threw out to provoke him, yet showed his forbearance by never sending me a second challenge. But I think his avarice would have stimulated him to do so, had I not, by my marriage with her, have put the widow's cash entirely beyond his reach.

In this manner we jogged on for a few weeks, my lady and I enjoying ourselves in every way to which money and contented hearts could conduce, and the Bostonian continually fretting himself at witnessing our profusion and happiness.

A certain philosopher has said, that happiness is not the child of imagination, but is the shadow of content; consequently, where the substance is, the shadow must follow. This philosopher's assertion I believe to be grounded on fact, for, verily, whenever I have been content, I have been happy; for which reason I now strive to avoid discontent, as I would any raging pestilence of the day.

I was youthful, healthy, and rich, and daily heard tell of the pleasures to be enjoyed in Europe, by visiting famed places, and participating in innumerable amusements, not to be found in a city such as Quebec; and, in consequence, I became desirous of crossing the Atlantic to visit my native land. Man, however, only rows in the voyage of life; he is steered by Fate, and not unfrequently knows no more where he is going to, than did Adrian of the journey his fleeting spirit was about to take, when he invoked it just before its flight.

A wife of mature years will generally be found ready to humour her youthful husband in any reasonable whim he may form. I found no difficulty in getting Mrs. Winpenny into the mind to dispose of our property in America, that we might remove together to Europe, to enjoy the sweets of a finer climate, and the advantages of a more extensive circle of acquaintance than Quebec could afford. But, though the good woman fell into my views, still she entertained certain local attachments to Italy, the country of her birth, which made her extremely unwilling to fix upon England as the place of our future residence; and she adduced so many convincing reasons,

to show that Italy was in all respects the preferable country to reside in, that I yielded to the force of her arguments, and it was therefore agreed upon that Italy should be the land of our abode, and Genoa, or its neighbourhood, the spot.

The greatest part of my wife's money had been invested in Italian stock, long previous to the time of my becoming acquainted with her; and we now busied ourselves in disposing of several houses, and some other property we had in Quebec, that we might either remit the produce to Italy, or carry it there with us in good bills of exchange.

Those who are earnest in a business of this sort, require not much time to accomplish this object. Ours was speedily effected, and we were only awaiting the departure of a vessel for Leghorn, which my wife was most anxious for the sailing of, as her health had now become alarmingly delicate, when the following almost unlooked-for event threatened to mar all my bright prospects.

One day I was on my way to the docks, when to my inconceivable astonishment, who should I meet but the Bostonian captain, walking arm-in-arm with my old commander, Lieutenant Jones, whom I would most gladly have avoided; but he had eyed me before I saw him, and leaving his companion some paces behind, he hastened after me, when having overtaken me, for I was walking away from them, he addressed me by saying most familiarly, "Andrew, my old shipmate, you have given me a precious long cruise in search of you; but here you are safe, and in gallant trim, within gun range of me. I shall now overhaul your lockers, and take into my sure keeping some of the many thousands of sterling pounds which you have got possession of, by heaving our old governor into Davy's locker.

For the ears of a young and wealthy benedict this was a most uncourteous address, and I confess I did not at all relish the salutation; but the want of self-command is not my foible, and I knew better than to show my anger where I could not injure. Besides, the terrific fellow I had to deal with, hitherto I had been accustomed to view with feelings of awe, and they were not to be shaken off without some considerable exertion.

"You are welcome to Quebec, Mr. Jones," said I, almost choaking with vexation while I spoke the words; "I trust you have made a prosperous voyage to South America."

"Ah, my youngster," rejoined he, "this sort of palaver may pass current amongst landsmen, but we have other fish to fry, and I will go home with you and look at your reckoning." "If there is a place of purgatory, I heartily wish you were there," thought I, but I took especial good care not to say so, for I felt that this was an affair where the most able generalship was called for; therefore, assuming as much composure as I could on so trying an occasion, I observed, that what we might have to say to each other, had best be done in private, while that, provided he got rid of his companion, I would accompany him to a retired coffee-house for this purpose.

"An old shipmate and brother buccaneer may be trusted; be-

sides, the man knows all about this business already; howsoever, since you wish it to be so, and mayhap we may then arrange the thing more to our own advantage, I'll propose to him to sheer off," was the lieutenant's reply to my proposition. A few words were now exchanged in conversation between two men whom I would willingly have seen kept from me by the bars of a prison; after which, Mr. Jones led me away with him to a retired inn, where, when closeted with each other, a good deal of conversation passed between us.

By what I gathered from his discourse, it appeared that Mr. Jones had returned to Porto Rico from his mission to the South Seas shortly after the time when the Spanish captain arrived there with a fresh cargo of slaves; and that this captain, who, like most other speculative men, could not be satisfied with any share of wealth, while he thought more might be obtained, had shown extreme inveteracy against me for having been made Robertson's heir; and because my agent, Mr. Jenkinson, had taken some legal measures to make him account for the share of the slaver and her cargo, to which I had become entitled as part of my inheritance. The ungrateful fellow, too, though he stood indebted to my benefactor for the command of the Saucy Jack, as also numerous other favours, by which he had grown into considerable wealth, yet now sought to monopolize to himself the whole of this vessel, together with the produce of her last cargo; and assuredly he would have succeeded in his object, but for the well-timed steps taken by Jenkinson, who, on my behalf, had got an injunction placed on the property in question. Baulked as he was in his views, still the unprincipled Spaniard resigned not his object; therefore, Lieutenant Jones' arrival at Porto Rico, which happened at this critical period, he hailed as an auspicious event, inasmuch as he thoroughly well knew the lieutenant's character, and what lengths self-interest might urge him to proceed against me. Accordingly, Lieutenant Jones had scarcely put foot ashore before the Spaniard made him his confidant, and the lieutenant, being almost as indignant as he was, at finding that I, whom he had always looked upon as a youngster, dependant on himself, had become master of Captain Robertson's wealth, most readily joined with him in devising measures to rob me of a part, or, if possible, of the whole of the rich inheritance.

With this object in view, it was agreed upon between the well-matched pair, that Mr. Jones should follow after me to the United States, to overtake me in my travels; when it was thought that, by his influence over me, he would be successful in making me surrender up a portion of the deceased Robertson's wealth, or where, perhaps, by making away with me, or intimidating me by threats, they might strip me of the whole of it. Moreover, I afterwards found these heroes purposed dividing every thing between them, and going into partnership in trade together.

The lieutenant, with more than blood-hound sagacity, had traced me to every place where I had been. The only lucky circumstance

on my side was, that he had not found his way to Quebec before Madam Chinchilla exchanged her name for that of Winpenny; for had that happened, most assuredly my old rival, the Bostonian, would then have triumphed over me.

The lieutenant, who cared not a *sou* in what manner Robertson had met his death, and scarcely put a question to me on the subject, yet showed himself extremely earnest to be made acquainted with the precise sum of money which I had already netted by that event, as also regarding how much more money I expected; I, however, waved the subject, and accounted for my present wealth as being most of it the fruits of my happy marriage.

Lieutenant Jones was not the man to credit this tale of mine; consequently, he blustered a great deal, and attempted to frighten me into his views; yet I continued firm in my manner, and at length he pretended to believe me; but perhaps the knowledge he had of the duel I had fought, had some effect in making him act so compliantly. Nevertheless, in spite of his concession, we had much conversation on this occasion, and some of it very acrimonious; however, the lieutenant, who had views upon me beyond what he avowed, so mollified his tone, that towards the close of our interview, he became somewhat communicative, when in reply to a question of mine regarding his acquaintance with the Bostonian Captain Hardsides, he gave me to understand that he was an old buccaneer commander, who had for many years been concerned with the deceased Robertson and their Spanish friend, the captain of the Saucy Jack, at Porto Rico, both in the slave trade and buccaneering adventures.

This piece of information opened my eyes to the real character of my old rival, for it instantly brought to my mind that he could be no other than the notorious pirate Martinus, long the terror of all honest navigators in the South Seas, and afterwards in the Gulf of Florida, and whose companions, most of them had been executed for piracy; some at New Orleans, and others at the point at Port Royal, in Jamaica. He himself had been outlawed by different states, and eventually compelled to resign the command he had of a slaver, and to fly from Porto Rico, in consequence of a murder perpetrated by him on a priest in a confessional box of the church there. "Young man," said the lieutenant at our parting, for well he remembered former days, and on the strength of them thought to still arrogate authority over me, "do you see, I mean to let you off on easy terms; but reflect upon it well before we again meet, for, by the powers, I must share with you some of the old commodore's money. Think of it, Andrew, and bear in mind that I am not to be shuffled."

"I know you, Mr. Jones," replied I, "you are a man of your word; and, believe me, though I am not to be intimidated, yet I will do what is right."

CHAPTER XXII.

" 'Tis true they are a lawless brood,
But rough in form, nor wild in mood,
And every creed and every race
With them hath found—may find a place."

" And vengeance vow'd for those who fall,
Hath made them fitting instruments
For more than e'en my own intents."

" Time at last sets all things even ;
And if we do but watch the hour,
There never yet was human power
Which could evade, if unforgiven,
The patient search, and vigil long,
Of him who treasures up a wrong."

It was fearful odds for a young man to have to cope against two such desperate characters as I now had to deal with ; for that Jones and Hardsides would lay their heads together to my detriment, to rob or even to destroy me, I made no question ; indeed, I was so thoroughly satisfied on the subject, that it filled my mind with serious reflections during the time I traced my steps home from the interview with Lieutenant Jones. Happily, however, I knew my men. I recollected how readily the lieutenant had obeyed his commander's orders, when he barbarously made away with the captain and crew of the Columbine ; while, as to Hardsides, alias Martinus, I doubted not from his character, and the ill will he bore towards me, but that he would readily have joined with his friend in flaying me alive, for the sake of my wealth. Heathen priestcraft, from those amongst all the motley garbs she wears, would find a difficulty in producing two more determined and dangerous individuals. Had we been living under an Italian sky, in a state where assassination is winked at by the lay government, and encouraged by the crime-absolving, and consequently more tolerating one of the church, my enemy might readily have got rid of me, and thus have ensured to himself a share of the Saucy Jack and her last cargo, even had he not devised means of robbing me of some of the wealth I had in North America ; but, luckily for me, I was not in a country under the dominion of the descendant of that St. Peter, who is said to

have been Bishop of Rome for twenty years, under the Emperor Nero, who himself reigned only thirteen years, but I was in North America, where crime is watched with more eyes than Argus ever possessed, and punished with unrelenting severity. I arrived at home in no very enviable mood, and would fain have embarked and set sail for Europe that same day, without giving publicity to my determination, had an opportunity offered of my doing so. This, however, was impossible, and I puzzled my brains to no good purpose to decide what I had best do regarding Mr. Jones, whose avarice I knew was not to be contented by my presenting him with a sum of money, otherwise, for old acquaintance sake, I would have compromised the business by doing so. I was still deliberating upon this unpleasant affair, when in the afternoon of the same day Captain Hardsides made his appearance at my house, bringing a message from the lieutenant, whereby he required of me to meet them at a place of my own appointing on the following day, and to bring with me two thousand dollars for Mr. Jones, of which he stood in immediate need.

It is folly to despair. The insolence of the message, combined with the arrogant manner of the messenger, at once made me decide on the steps I should pursue; therefore, the better to succeed in my project, I affected to take in good part all that was said, and in compliance with the lieutenant's expressed wish, made an appointment to meet him and his friend the captain on the following evening, at a cabaret of my naming, a little way outside of the town.

I make no doubt that Hardsides thought all was as it should be, for after he had minutely noted down the time and place for our meeting each other, and given me a caution not to forget the dollars, he departed, apparently highly satisfied with the result of his embassy; and no sooner was he fairly out of the house, than I sallied forth to prepare measures for ridding myself of these troublesome characters, in a way which I have now to explain.

I had, previous to Hardsides' visit, called to mind the circumstance, that an Indian chief of my acquaintance, named "the Fox," and a party of his followers, were at that time sojourning in Quebec; and I knew, that with this chief I could do pretty well what I pleased, but still I had not made my mind up to employ him as my partisan, in getting rid of Lieutenant Jones; now, however, that I saw there would be no contenting the lieutenant, and that Hardsides, alias Martinus, acted in collusion with him, I judged, that if they went on unmolestedly in their machinations, ruin, and perhaps death, would fall to my lot, and, therefore, in self-defence, I determined to act a determined part with them both; with which view, well knowing the usual haunts of "the Fox," I now went in search of him.

Here it is necessary I should explain that "the Fox" was the celebrated chief in whose cause Monsieur Chinchilla had got killed, fighting most gallantly by his side. "The Fox" had for many years been in the habit of bartering away furs to Monsieur Chinchilla, and, like a true Indian friend, since that gentleman's death, had un-

ceasingly done his best to obtain vengeance against the hostile tribe from which he met his death; but "the Wolf," who was the head of that tribe, and the individual who tomahawked him, was too powerful a chief to be overcome by "the Fox;" nevertheless, this last had so far watched a favouring opportunity, that on an occasion when "the Wolf" was absent from home, he and his people had not only tomahawked "the Wolf's" mother, but scalped all the children, infirm persons, and women, in their village.

In the arts of war, Ulysses himself was not a more subtle shuffler than "the Fox." He was master of most of the wily tricks for which Homer so vastly extols the divinity Pallas; but in peace, "the Fox" was a perfect Bacchus—a never-flinching, jolly companion. He and "the Wolf," in their native wilds, were almost constantly warring against each other; they each eagerly coveted the other's scalp, and each of them had lost in this warfare his dearest friends and nearest relatives; yet, when at Quebec together, they daily smoked the calumet of peace, and would so laugh and jest with each other, on both olden and passing events, that any one who witnessed their glee, and was unacquainted with the histories of these famous men, would naturally have supposed them to be warriors belonging to the same tribe, who held only one interest, and had the same object in view.

"The Fox" happened to be housed in the first petty inn where I sought after him, and what was a rare thing with him when in Quebec, he was sober, as a parson ought to be when displaying his eloquence from a pulpit. "Friend Andrew," said he, on my entrance, addressing me with his accustomed familiarity, "how is your wife? Her first husband was my sworn friend, and he died fighting bravely by my side; say, can I do any service either for you or for her?"

"A faithful friend is a real treasure; Chinchilla was such to thee; and thou wilt prove one wherever thy promise of friendship is given," was my reply.

"Yes," rejoined he, "were it to exterminate an entire tribe of my countrymen, if I had promised as much, I would do it. The leaves should fall one by one, till the tree or I myself perished." "You are a great warrior, and have a heart as true as it is stout," said I; "your name carries terror with it into the innermost wigwams of your foes; 'the Wolf' himself cannot rest while thou art in his neighbourhood; the scalp of a squaw of his, together with those of many of his warriors, hangs behind your door; but still, my friend, war, however glorious it is, must interfere with your fur trade; you can have little time left you for hunting the beaver."

"Right, you say right," answered 'the Fox;' "I have got a plenty of scalps, but I have no rum; and the dogs of merchants here, since I can bring them no skins of the beaver, refuse to give me credit for tobacco and rum."

"I am going to the land of my fathers," said I. "The sun, when it shines upon you, will leave me in the darkness of night; and I

have come here, my good friend, to say I have two puncheons of rum warehoused here, which are quite at your service; and of the smoking weed, I can supply you with as much as you want."

"It is a gift you make, worthy of the husband of Chinchilla's squaw. The rum and five hundred weight of tobacco I will myself see borne away to my factor's to-morrow; but say, Andrew, is there no piece of service I can do for you, before you go hence for the land of your fathers?" "Brave chief! there are two scoundrels, two sworn foes of mine living here, who wish to rob me—to strip me of my Chinchilla's fortune. To-morrow evening I am to meet them at an inn, beyond the fortifications of Quebec. I ask no other favour of thee, than to forcibly bear them away with thee to thy country, so that they shall be heard of no more in this quarter for at least one month to come." "Take me to the place where you are to meet these men, and point them out to me, and I swear, by the sacred bones of my father, to fulfil these desires of your's regarding them. They shall go with me to my own country, and sleep there to eternity, sooner than regain their freedom before the moon of next month is as old as is now the present moon."

More of our conversation I need not relate, for the mind of man is known to be the same in whatever circumstances the individual may be placed, and, unquestionably, the same motives of action govern all equally, whatever may be their situation. "The Fox," like more civilized men, was open to flattery and a bribe. He loved rum and tobacco too well to resist the temptations they afforded, while the sound of his own praises was the sweetest of music to the ears of this savage.

Besides, the spirit of enterprise and the passion of revenge animated his heart, and in punishing my enemies he gratified the former, and persuaded himself that he was revenging Chinchilla's death, by promoting the interests of his relict.

Thus it is that reason is made subservient to education. This warrior had been trained in the way his father wished him to go, and he followed it with filial fidelity. But every nation, religion, and people, have their peculiar way of training the youth as he should go, and after making allowance for the customs of all, it would puzzle philosophy, and make sceptics grow more sceptical, to attempt a decision upon which is the best education.

Two puncheons of rum and five hundred weight of tobacco, which I purchased expressly for the purpose, were that same day conveyed by my directions to the store of the fur merchant with whom "the Fox" carried on his dealings; and early on the evening of the following day, by a preconcerted arrangement, "the Fox" and six of his men hid themselves in ambush in the yard of the cabaret, where my meeting with the two formidable buccaneers was to take place.

Captain Hardsides and Lieutenant Jones entered the house in question before I did, as, by design, I was a little behind my time. "Well, youngster," said the lieutenant, on my entrance, "you think nothing of keeping your elders waiting for you; but receivers gene-

rally are more ready than paymasters: where, however, is the money?"

"Money is a scarce article, and I must disappoint your expectations for once. What say you to a draught upon a merchant at Porto Rico? Will not that suit you nearly as well as ready cash?" "Blood and wounds! what is it you mean, youngster? Has life become a burden to you, that you wish to part with it? Come, none of your shuffling, where are the two thousand dollars?"

"I have come here unprovided with cash, but am ready and willing to give you a bill of exchange upon our friend the Spanish merchant at Porto Rico, who, you know, is my debtor to a large amount, on account of the Santissima Trinidada, or Saucy Jack, and her last slave cargo."

"Villain!" thundered the lieutenant, "make your confession, for you have not ten minutes to live;" and he seized me by the collar while he spoke. "Spare his life, Jones, conditionally, that he signs an order for two thousand pounds on his wife, instead of giving the dollars, and we will keep him our prisoner till we have the money," said the considerate Hardsides.

"Captain Martinus," replied I, "as you well know the people of Porto Rico, you must know that the bill I proffer is a good one; therefore, instead of money, advise your friend to take my bill of exchange."

This last speech of mine stirred the rage of my opponents to a sort of climax; but still they knew better than to slay me, as my murder would have marred their prospects of extorting money from me, and in all probability brought their necks to the halter; their fury, however, was so great, that they threw me down, and began belabouring me with their fists; but I bawled out lustily for assistance, when almost instantly "the Fox" and his followers rushed into the room, and in defiance of their outcries and efforts to prevent them, pinioned my opponents, each with his elbows tight together behind him.

"By my soul," stammered the lieutenant, "this young fellow will prove a master of his trade; he has got us both in his power beyond all redemption, and these Indians, no doubt, are commissioned to slay us." "Would that I myself had thought of employing such people, instead of fighting as I did, like a fool as I am," muttered the chop-fallen captain.

A victory, such as I had gained, was a great triumph. I, however, neither insulted the conquered, nor relieved their minds from the misery attendant on the expectation of being butchered.

The Indians, as had been preconcerted between us, led the captives away gagged and pinioned; but previous to their doing this, "the Fox" took the pistols and every thing else he thought worth taking from their persons, which he, hero like, made his own, and agreeable to his education, considered himself justly entitled to.

In this adventure I could not fail admiring the acuteness shown by "the Fox." He performed his part in a most masterly manner;

and though his face was hidden in a mask, procured by me for the occasion, yet, not satisfied with this disguise, he had clothed himself in an Indian chief's dress, the very counterpart of that usually worn by "the Wolf." Thanks to which, at a future day he would fearlessly re-visit Quebec; while this old enemy of his, who was not likely ever to hear tell of this affair, would hereby have his life and liberty placed in jeopardy in his future visits to the city.

The landlord of the cabaret where this adventure took place was a man I had served, and in whom I could confide, on which account it was that I made choice of his house as the scene for this adventure. He, of course, had taken good care that no individual of his family, save himself, should be at home to witness what took place, and to his heart's content I remunerated him for his services on the occasion.

I have reasons for believing that "the Fox" carried his captives from the neighbourhood of Quebec tied up in sacks; but how far he conveyed them on their way by water, and how far by land, are circumstances of which I am totally ignorant, nor have I ever learnt whether he let them go free at the expiration of the promised month; though, as an American Indian, faithful to his promise, I presume he must have done so. These were things I left entirely to chance, and, indeed, which I cared little about, for my mind was quite made up to bid adieu not only to Quebec, but to the quarter of the globe to which this city belongs, and that long before another moon could show her bright face to its shores.

CHAPTER XXIII.

" And their baked lips with many a bloody crack,
Suck'd in the moisture which like nectar stream'd.
Their throats were ovens, their swoln tongues were black."

" Ah, mariner! in wayward hour
Ye brav'd the whirlwind's power."

" Long on the ocean tempest toss'd,
At last we gain the happy coast;
And safe recount upon the shore
Our sufferings past and dangers o'er."

THERE is nothing like being prompt in business, which really ought to be done. The vessel destined for Leghorn was not to sail for some days after the Indian chief's departure with my two enemies in his good custody, but there was a French brig lying in the harbour, which was to sail for Marseilles the very next day, and to me it was a matter of indifference to which of these places I proceeded.

Very opportunely, too, at this critical epoch, I had the satisfaction of receiving most agreeable tidings from my agent at St. Thomas's. His letter informed me that he had found it necessary to take legal measures against the captain of the Santissima Trinidada, alias the Saucy Jack, and that he had so far carried his point, as to have recovered a sum of rather better than eight thousand dollars from him on my account, which he held ready to remit to me whenever I communicated my pleasure on the subject.

As to my further claims, he said he feared nothing more could be got on account of the Saucy Jack, for that the captain had concocted strange and many claims against the vessel and her last cargo, which, though most of them evidently unjust, could not be controverted, in consequence of Robertson's death, and the evidence which ought to have been for us having been suborned on the other side. However, all things considered, he concluded by saying he must congratulate me on having recovered what was now got from so unprincipled a man; while that some of my claims for money due at Jamaica, he trusted, would be substantiated and cancelled by payment.

The preceding communication made my mind easy regarding my West Indian affairs, and having written to Mr. Jenkinson to notify

that I was on the eve of sailing for Europe, whence he should have instructions from me, I proceeded to arrange my other affairs.

Accordingly, having talked over the business with my spouse, which I did on the same night I so happily had got rid of my two maritime enemies, and she entirely coinciding with me in my sentiments on the subject, at an early hour next morning I engaged for our passage to Marseilles, when shortly afterwards I caused my lady and my luggage to be shipped on board the vessel.

Even hot-headed commanders have made the avowal, that a prudent retreat not unfrequently is more advantageous than gaining a fresh victory. On this occasion I was of their opinion, and as soon as I had effected my business on shore, lost no time in hastening on board the French ship, which already had Blue Peter flying aloft, and her cable shortened ready for weighing anchor. The captain alone waited my arrival; therefore, shortly after my embarkation, his anchor was aboard her, and the ship under weigh, sailing from the harbour of Quebec.

"Adieu, a long adieu to the shores of the new world," said I to myself, while taking my farewell look at the land of America. I have run an adventrous, but a prosperous course, in this quarter of the world. My time has not been long here; who, however, can say I have not done more memorable deeds than some men perform in their entire lives? Cæsar, it is said, was prompt in execution. Yet, who can compare that bald-pated old robber, who worked with the hands of others, to a youth such as I am; one that, unaided by partisans, stands indebted to good luck and himself only for having inherited to the wealth of *one*, and got the mastery over *two*, of the most daring and experienced buccaneers, of all whose deeds the pen of history shall put upon record? Who shall compare that vile enslaver of his countrymen, that wholesale butcher of the human species, to a youth who, although born to poverty and reared up in misery, counselled to by a pitiful-spirited parent, to make his penny how and where he could, has, nevertheless, and at an early age, contrived to gather together a sum of sterling money amounting to near forty thousand pounds, with abundance of plate and jewellery besides.

An ordinary voyage at sea is a very common place occurrence, of which it would ill become a buccaneer, who has suffered the most direful of shipwrecks, to attempt recording the particulars. In short, none except fine-weather travellers, who voyage only that they may write books, but are unprepared to face storms and untoward adventures, when they present themselves, would think of imposing such trash on their readers as it affords.

The La Sybelle, the ship we were on board, had a tolerable good voyage for seventeen days, during which we encountered some blowing weather, which made my spouse very sea sick, but we met with no severe storm. On the eighteenth morning, in latitude 44. 43. north, and longitude 21. 20. west, we came in sight of a wreck, which, as a signal of distress, had an old flag hoisted downwards, on a boom erected beside her broken mainmast.

Monsieur Jaconet, our captain, made sail for the wreck, when, on our hailing her, we were told that she was the Matilda, laden with timber, from St. John's, New Brunswick, bound to Liverpool, and that the few survivors of her crew were in a state of starvation; and earnestly implored, for the salvation of their lives, that we would take them off the wreck.

Monsieur Jaconet was a humane man. He hesitated not a moment, but immediately hoisted out a boat, and had the poor sufferer's, among whom were two females, conveyed to the La Sybelle. They were all of them in a most dreadful condition. I never before had seen such sad objects; squalid starvation was conspicuous in every face, which sunken eyes, hollow cheeks, and parched lips, combined to impress with a deadly hue. Our surgeon, however, a kind-hearted and a skilful man, had the poor sufferers placed in warm beds, and supplied with food and drink in small quantities at a time; by which prudent treatment they were all, save one, gradually restored to health and strength. I shall attempt no particular description of them, but content myself by summing up their truly miserable story as briefly as possible; for, were I to extract it from their log-book, the detail of the protracted sufferings of these unfortunate people would be most heart-rending. The Matilda sailed from St. John's on the 18th January, and on the 1st February she was caught in a dreadful gale, which carried away her fore and mizenmasts, her cabouse, her jolly-boat, and disabled five of her men: the gale continuing, several days after she lost her long-boat, had her rudder unshipped, and a man washed overboard. The crew now cut away the anchors, and endeavoured to save some provision by knocking the bow-port out, for the ship was nearly full of water, and her stern stove in. The quantity saved was trifling; this they stowed away in the main-top, where they also got two females placed, who were on board—the master's wife, and a young single woman, a passenger, and where they themselves slept, lashed in the best way they could secure each other. For twenty-two days this scene of wretchedness continued, during which no less than eighteen out of twenty-four, the original number on board, perished by fatigue or starvation, or were washed alive into the ocean; and what was more horrible and degrading to humanity, the poor sufferers were necessitated to eat of the bodies of their starved companions, to keep life and soul together. At last, though not until after the single woman had partaken of the body of a man to whom she was betrothed, and the master's wife, of that of her husband's apprentice—a poor youth, who had been three times wrecked before, and providentially saved, to come to this at last, and that several of the crew, from drinking salt water, had become foolish, crawled upon their hands about the deck, and died raving mad—it was the fate of the survivors to be extricated from their miserable state by the humanity of our good captain.

Monsieur Jaconet showed every possible attention to the poor sufferers, and supplied them with the best food in the ship; yet, prudently, he put them on a short allowance, that they might not de-

stroy the powers of nature by repletion, as innumerable people in their situation are known to have done; and by this considerate care on the part of our commander, all, save one who died on the third day after they were brought aboard us, were happily restored to health.

James Monday, one of the survivors, a young Kentishman, who had been chief mate of the wrecked vessel, and became disgusted with the sea service, I engaged in my employ; and, happily, after taking these poor people on board us, we met with no unpleasant adventure on the voyage, but arrived safe and well at Marseilles, after a favourable and rather a quick passage.

On landing at Marseilles, I proceeded to one of the best hotels, and the expense being no consideration, my wife and I lived here in splendid profusion. Every thing was new to me. It appeared as if I had been transported into another world; theatres, coffee-houses, equestrian and other performances; indeed, all things and places tended to afford me gratification; and as to the French cookery, it was as delicious to my palate as the wines were excellent.

Marseilles, the capital city of Provence, is well worth visiting. Some writers pretend it was founded by the Greek exiles, who were driven out of their country by Cyrus the Great. The Romans courted the friendship of the citizens of Marseilles, and after the fall of Rome, it was governed by four counts; but, ultimately, the inhabitants, finding themselves unable to maintain their freedom, put themselves under the protection of France. The conditions of their submission were very honourable; but under a Duke of Guise, general of the galleys, their privileges were abolished, and a citadel was erected on each side of the port. The arsenal and the galleys here are well worthy of a visit, yet the latter impress the mind with horror, at witnessing to what a state of degradation human beings may be brought. The vicissitudes of religion, too, are strongly exemplified here; for the church of Notre-Dame des Accoules, was formerly consecrated to Pallas, that of Saint Saviour to Apollo, and the cathedral was the temple of Diana. In the last, the body of a Saint Lazarus is kept in a silver shrine, and the true cross of Saint Andrew, seven feet long, is shown. Indeed, the whole city abounds with holy relics; but at Saint Boume, on the road hence to Toulon, is a cave, in the midst of a rock, where lies Mary Magdalen's body, in a coffin, seven feet long, and where Mary Magdalen, according to the tradition, lived thirty-three years; notwithstanding which, the place is always extremely cold, from the dropping of water from the impending rock, which fills a cistern below, with *what* priestcraft has denominated the virgin's tears.

In France, however, few persons, save dotards and children, care about relics or shrines: they have happier thoughts, and they know there is nothing like gaiety. Trouble is only the brooding of a distempered mind; and, happily, the French are not much afflicted this way; but *gai, toujours gai,* is a maxim followed by many of them, from the nursery to the grave. They are a joyous people,

and so are all others who set care at defiance; for care is a canker-worm to the heart, which none save a lunatic would nourish. Youthful as I was, and blessed with a light heart, the manners of the people here were exactly such as I should have been desirous of finding among persons I had to associate with. The men were all excellent companions; and the women, to do them justice, were all of them kind—aye, and the fair sex of Marseilles are pretty, too; yet, notwithstanding my opinion, I know there are persons in the world who presume to find fault with the Frenchman's character, saying that he is insincere, and professes a vast deal more than he means to perform; I, however, maintain that these people are partly in error, for that the Frenchman is about as sincere as his neighbours. He who doubts this, would do well to consult a few of his old acquaintances; and if any experienced individual of them should tell him that in his career he has found mankind to be sincere, no matter in what clime or country, he himself needs only to reside there for a short time to discover that this friend of his is a romancer.

There are exceptions, however, to all rules, for deformity is to be found even among the fairest productions of nature; and that which I now have to recount, furnishes a ludicrous instance of the variety in the Gallic character.

Among my acquaintances here there was a certain chevalier, named Bruges; he was a dashing young fellow, the very pink of fashion, and the life of society wherever he moved; but, notwithstanding all this, I soon suspected that at bottom he was one of those enterprising characters known as *les chevaliers d'industrie*. This personage, whose society was courted every where, related to me how he had formed an intimacy with a very remarkable character—a nobleman living in the vicinity of Marseilles, who, like many great and distinguished persons that have lived before him, from a disease of the imagination had fallen into unaccountably strange notions regarding his personal identity and character. The nobleman, the chevalier said, was an hypochondriac, who had been brought to this state from over-study, and whose cure could alone be hoped for by setting him to toil as a ploughman, or at some other sort of hard labour, where good air, strong exercise, and the sweat of his brow, might, by their combined powers, restore him to a sane sense of his condition. Gaspard Barlaas, a physician and poet, it is related, was deranged by study, until he fancied his body was converted into butter, and, in consequence, feared to approach the fire; but the nobleman, of whom I am speaking, was subject to many different delusions of the imagination: like a celebrated prince of the house of Bourbon, he would believe himself to be a woman, which, my informant laughingly added, was no very unusual thing amongst the aristocracy and the clergy of that country; but his most usual fancy, the chevalier said, was to suppose himself the Arcadian Silenus, when, in imitation of him, he would ride over his pleasure grounds on an ass, and conclude the exploits of the day, by getting gloriously inebriated.

Sportive mirth is often the parent of frolicsome adventure. There was a something so ludicrous in this noble person's insanity, that the chevalier and I laughed most heartily about it; until at length, from laughing, we began to devise whether we could make his diseased imagination the source of some humorsome adventure.

The chevalier was fertile in expedients. He also had been well educated, and consequently knew much of the nonsense of the heathen, as well as of certain other absurd mythologies. After a little consideration, he told me he thought he had hit the right nail on the head, and that provided I would personify that king of Phrygia, he would persuade his insane friend that he would take him to a feast in the Elysian shades, at which Midas should be present to entertain him, as he once did Silenus's foster son Bacchus.

Of Bacchus I had frequently heard tell, but of Midas and Silenus knew nothing; and I'll take on me to warrant that my old companions the buccaneers knew as little; nevertheless, I took on myself the task of acting the part of Midas, for the purpose of deceiving silly Silenus; but with this proviso, that the chevalier was to dress me in a way suitable to the part, and give me my proper cue how to act.

The nobleman not only readily fell into the snare we had laid for him, but was in raptures of joy on the occasion, and in the warmth of his heart declared the chevalier to be the best friend he had in the world, for ensuring to him a feast in the Elysian shades, with the ghost of Midas as one of his festive companions.

The farce we had projected was performed to admiration. In a cellar lit by torch lights, fumigated with brimstone, and hung around with curious old goblin tapestry, a costly supper was laid out, to partake of which the chevalier brought the hypochondriac nobleman blindfolded to this Elysian shade; when, on having his eyes uncovered, they were dazzled by the brilliancy of the light, and his senses bewildered at beholding the imposing scene; but most especially me, seated as Midas, at the head of the table, habited in a grotesque satin dress, with long asses ears attached to my head, which hung dangling over my shoulders.

We made a jovial feast of it, well worthy of Bacchus's foster father, who enjoyed himself to his heart's delight; but, when the juice of the grape began to operate, was rather troublesome in his attempt at pulling my borrowed ears, the length and hairyness of which entirely gained his admiration; and he was inquisitive concerning my celebrated verdict in favour of Pan against Apollo, in their trial of singing, till I silenced him by the assurance that I had been too severely punished for my error by the unnatural growth of my ears. The two servants in attendance wore masks, so their merry countenances were hid, though, occasionally, they found it impossible to smother their rising laughter; of this, however, Silenus took no further notice than once or twice to hiccup a rebuke at their want of manners. Ultimately the imaginary foster father of the jolly god was made as immortally drunk as ever Silenus is

represented to have been, and in this state carried out of the cellar, to be borne home in a carriage we had ready for the purpose.

This frolicsome adventure soon became the talk of the town, and every body of our acquaintance passed their jokes with us upon it; but the best part of the story is, that several days after the supper the noble dupe waited upon the chevalier to express his regret at not having got Midas to turn some silver into gold for him; when Bruges, who was always on the *qui vive* to make the most of circumstances, fell into the humour of the thing, and promised to get an application made to Midas on the subject of his noble friend's desire. The result of all which was, another supper party assembled in the well-lit perfumed cellar, at which, when Silenus was half seas over, he was called upon to produce six bars of silver, which had been procured by, and brought with him, for the express purpose; and I produced my wand, with a touch of which, and certain accompanying sleight of hand tricks practised by the chevalier, the bars of silver apparently were transmuted into the like number of golden bars; and in due time, the happy Silenus was borne away from the feast, thoroughly inebriated, to be conveyed home, with six shining bars of gold-like looking metal as his companions in the coach.

I remained not at Marseilles to witness the *dénouement* of this adventure with regard to the apparent transmutation of the precious metals, for on the morning after the last feast in *our* Elysian shades, my wife and I departed for Genoa; but, certainly, should the hypochondriac not have attempted to turn his yellow bars into money, much time may have elapsed before his eyes became opened to the baseness of the metal.

CHAPTER XXIV.

" On the rankling soul
The gaming fury falls, and in one gulf
Of total ruin, honour, virtue, place,
Friends, families, and fortune, headlong fall."

" Accursed game! thou wring'st the bitter drop
From gentle eyes that never saw thee play'd;
And oft the stinted meal, the empty cup,
Mock hungry hearts thy raven waste hath made."

" Religion, virtue, morals, all give way,
And conscience dies, the prostitute of play;
Eternity ne'er steals one thought between,
Till suicide complete the fatal scene."

We journeyed at a pleasant rate through the picturesque country between Marseilles, one of the richest cities of a pompous monarchy, and Genoa, once the seat of government of a famous republic—the mart of commerce, and mistress of the neighbouring seas. The country about Genoa, however, is barren; but nothing tends more than want to sharpen the wits of man, and the Genoese are esteemed a cunning, industrious people, more inured to hardships than the rest of the Italians, which was the character of their ancestors, the ancient Ligurians.

At Genoa, as I have already said, we intended to sojourn for a time, if not to fix our permanent abode; but had our design been different, still we must have come to a halt here, as, unfortunately, my poor wife's health, which had been declining for months, had got so much worse since commencing our journey, that it would have been impracticable for her to have proceeded further, without first enjoying some repose.

After spending a few days at an hotel, we suited ourselves with an elegant and most conveniently furnished house, the property of a young nobleman, who, owing to losses sustained at play, had found himself under the disagreeable necessity of hiring out the mansion of his forefathers, in less than two years from the time of its becoming his; and here we lived in a style every way suitable to my ample income.

He who has sufficient wealth, every body knows may by hospitality command the best society, and I now lived on terms of intimacy with most of the leading characters of the place; but of balls,

dinner parties, pic-nicks, and other such amusements, I soon grew weary, and, in consequence, turned my attention to those diversions from which an adept may derive profit as well as pleasure. Horse racing, the billiard table, and private gaming houses, now engaged much of my time; for, as to public play rooms, none, save the proprietors, make any profit there. They it is who, with more than Midas's power, turn every thing they touch into gold, but, less liberal than Chevalier Bruges, leave their dupes no kind of metal in exchange for departed treasure.

My acquaintance the chevalier paid this town a visit shortly after I had fixed myself in it; and, as a matter of course, we, who had quaffed our nectar together in the Elysian shades, with the foster father of Bacchus, resumed our intimacy. Besides, to a man employed in the avocations I must plead youth and temptation for now following, this knight of the post promised to be a valuable associate; one who could well back all my undertakings for gain; or, if he was not allowed to participate in them, too often mar their success.

Chevalier Bruges may be said to have stood almost unrivalled in his profession. He could shuffle or pack cards so as to *insure* the object he had in view; and, when necessary, would pare the skin from his thumb and fore-finger, in a way which enabled him, from certain little marks he put on them, to ascertain what cards he held by their feel. Moreover, at all times he was provided with packs of cards, in which the honours were either a shade thicker, broader, or longer, than the other cards; while, as to dice, he never went abroad, not even to church, without carrying loaded ones in his pocket; and, when a party had been made, at which he might risk detection, he would attend it with dice about him, which on one side had been soaked in water, and, with a proficient like the chevalier, this answers nearly as well as when they have been loaded. In fine, he was a complete master of his trade, one who knew how to turn into *certainty* those gambling transactions which the uninitiated believe are dependent on chance. From the shuffling game of the thimble-rig, to the unprincipled mysteries practised in horse racing, all black-leg transactions he could successfully manage, even to the planting of a false tail upon a racer, which, however, was not his invention, but borrowed by him from a certain well-known English sporting lord, who, although sometimes a placeman and always a pensioner, was of his honourable fraternity.

My heart now became contaminated by the gamester's vice—the love of gain—and with such a colleague as the chevalier, assisted by his *professional* friends, can it be wondered at that I added something to my wealth? But the fraternity the noble knight introduced me to won very largely, which I, who played on the square, could not be expected to do. I now saw that games of chance may be *artfully* managed, and the most apparently casual throw of the dice be made subservient to the purposes of chicanery and

fraud. The nature of cards must be mixed, most games having in them a portion of skill and of chance; since the success of the player must depend as much on the chance of the *deal*, as on his skill in playing the game. But even the chance of the deal is liable to be perverted by all the tricks of shuffling and cutting, not to mention how the honourable player may be deceived in a thousand shapes by the craft of the sharper during the playing, of the cards themselves; consequently, professed gamblers of all denominations, whether their games be of apparent skill or mere chance, may be hustled together, as being equally meritorious and equally infamous.

When loan contractors, or other persons in the confidence of their government, make a good use of the information confided to them, by securing large fortunes to themselves at the Stock Exchange, at the expense of those *not* in the secret, the *time-bargains* and other transactions by which their object is effected are termed *speculations;* therefore, notwithstanding that the business I now performed to add to my wealth was less dishonourable than what is usually done by the aforesaid personages, yet, as appropriate to its nature, I shall term mine a successful *speculation.*

My success filled me with ardour for new adventure, and many persons became the dupes of Chevalier Bruges and his party, in successful speculations of theirs. Indeed it was a profitable game we all played; however, the sun of good fortune does not always shine, and he who plays at bowls must sometimes meet with rubbers.

A party for play had been assembled in my house, at which various maritime officers of different nations were present, from whom the chevalier calculated on gleaning no small gains; but unluckily, from imagining these gentlemen were novices at games of chance, he acted too unguardedly in performing one of his sleight of hand tricks, and was detected in the unfair *speculation.* Instantly, all became uproar and confusion, nor could it well be otherwise, for a large sum of money lay deposited on the board, and its fate was dependent on the turn-up card, which the chevalier had so mal-adroitly managed. Human life hangs by a thread. Several of the maritime officers were accustomed to have their own way, except when under the rod of naval discipline; consequently, it is not to be marvelled at that they almost simultaneously seized upon the offender, when a dreadful scuffle ensued, and he was thrown, or else fell accidentally, from the veranda of the apartment. It was a bold measure this, which would have done no discredit to a crew of buccaneers. The veranda from which the poor speculator fell was at a height of twenty feet from the street, and he, unfortunately pitching upon his head, had his neck broken. I wished the whole party far away, and the deuce only knows where they went, for every one disappeared like lightning; and, what was very unaccountable in gamblers, such had been the confusion, that some left money on the table.

Let the statue of honour be erected to the man whose actions

merit it. By hollow liberalism, mad hunting sophistries, and the creation of uncalled-for place, did not a certain state minister (always notorious for his jobs) completely juggle a great nation, and consequently after death have his statue erected opposite the place where, by means of his oratory, he imposed fallacies upon the people as so many truths? And do not nations too often erect statues to the memory of defaulters and the unprincipled? Since, then, there is a fashion in all things, and gaming is no bar to honours of that description, should there be a subscription entered into, to erect a granite column or a marble statue to his memory, I hope I shall be pardoned for contributing handsomely towards that of Chevalier Bruges. He was a *chevalier d'industrie*, it is true, and I have since learnt, defrauded the hypochondriac Silenus of his bars of silver; but in vindication of my character, be it observed, that at the time of our feast I believed the transmutation of metal to have been meant only as a frolic; yet *malgre* all this, the chevalier was a pleasant companion, probably too as deserving of a statue as half the conquerors and monarchs of olden times. The manner of Bruges's death was a bad affair, which might have brought a slur upon my character had I not circulated money to buy the services of the journalists; and although a sort of inquest was held on the body, thanks to the newspaper accounts, the world was made to believe, that notwithstanding this catastrophe had happened at my house, I was myself one of the most virtuous and best men in the city.

There is nothing in life helps a man on more than character, and yet as all men are *actors*, character must invariably be false. The worse the man, the better the actor, and consequently the higher will his character stand. This great truth was known to Augustus Cæsar, for he, after murdering friends and foes with a ferocity which would have disgraced Sylla and Caius Marius, thought fit to leave a character behind him for *humanity*, and made his courtiers greet him by loud plaudits, at the moment when his soul was about taking its flight to futurity.

After this, let none asperse the character of Chevalier Bruges; no, nor that of a buccaneer. The famous Teach, surnamed *Blackbeard*, was a virtuous man when brought into comparison with *Augustus* Cæsar; yet no historian has passed encomiums upon the renowned pirate, who, to his lasting praise be it mentioned, though he was a common slayer of man, a bigamist with thirty wives, a violator, and a robber, yet was he no *impostor?*

The moral character I had made a purchase of, although it was of a nature to procure me advancement in a public situation under a government, where the sceptic thinks a man can do no great good for himself, unless he be an arrant impostor, served as an impediment to success in my way of life, and I could well have dispensed with it.

"Confound the character I have got," I would often say to myself, "did a man ever before throw money away to so foolish a

purpose as I have done in buying it? Character, indeed, what have I to do with character? It is fit only for a tradesman; but, if it was transferable, I would willingly take quarter price for it."

There is no resisting fate. I set no value on my new character, yet by a sort of infatuation acted as if I was desirous of preserving it, insomuch as I gave up holding card parties in my house, and carried on my gambling transactions elsewhere; but the more gaming is decried, the better it thrives, and as the chevalier's lamentable death afforded matter for the gospel-mongers and sectarians to descant upon, so proportionately it brought more novices to try their fortunes at games of chance, and the greater gains to the fraternity of gamesters.

A rich vineyard was now before them, and I took especial care to gather as full a share as I could of the prolific harvest it afforded; some professional playmen, however, I discovered, are not such proficients, or so successful as others, and that these persons are extremely addicted to the practice of borrowing. I lent small sums to many distressed characters, but after a time left off the injudicious custom; for I found that no fortune would be large enough to satisfy the wants of such claimants, and that when men so conquer the sense of shame, as to become *regular* borrowers of money, the supplier of their wants must be worse than insane if he expects in this life to be repaid. My soul was narrowed by avarice, yet *rational* men must applaud my conduct; for it was squared by that of bankers and merchants, who lend no money without proper security. Security forms all the links of the chain of credit, without it no business could flourish.

A Spanish don, who had come to Genoa on his travels, well supplied with the needful, in an evil hour found his way among our fraternity, and as he was but a novice at play, who prided himself on his high principles of honour, the result was what might have been expected, he lost to the last coin of his money. His donship, who was a rigid Catholic, appealed to all the saints in the calendar to help him out of his difficulties; but they either did not hear him, or must have felt no compassion for so improvident a character, for certain it is they brought him no relief; yet the wits of the place said the saints were so selfish as to let their wretched votary burn away at their shrines all the wax tapers he could procure. A god, if he were poor, would be despised in a gaming house; and knowing this, the gentleman's pride, backed by the hopes he entertained of deriving assistance from the saints, kept him above dependence for a considerable time; but during this ordeal his appearance gradually altered for the worse, till from being hale, portly, and well dressed, he sunk into a wan-visaged, lank personage, who wore threadbare greasy old garments.

I saw he had sunk into a deplorable state of poverty, and when his spirit was debased to a level with his condition, so that he asked me for assistance, on several occasions I befriended him in a pecuniary way. The don's applications, however, became too numerous,

and I ceased administering to his wants; but one evening, when I was present in the play room, his desperation became so great, that on seeing a professed member of the gaming fraternity pocket a handful of gold which he had just won, he whispered pretty loudly in his ear that money he must have, and provided he did not instantly accommodate him with the loan of five gold pieces, he would publicly expose him.

No gamester chooses to have his honour called in question, and the speech just made certainly implied nothing favourable to the gamester's honour; therefore, considering it necessary to publicly notice the insulting insinuation of his opponent, he gently waved his hand towards him, saying, he had best go home and sleep himself sober, before he again came among *honourable* company. "*Honourable* company!" repeated the Spaniard with emphasis, and trembling with passion while he spoke. "Infamous scoundrels! dishonourable ruffians! ye of this fraternity all are. Heartless villians! every man of you deserving of the scaffold!" Several young heirs, who were present, stared with astonishment at the uncourteous address, and happily for them they lost no time in pocketing their money; but the gamester who had aggravated the don to make his invidious philippic, rising from his chair with the calmness of a judge going to pronounce an extreme sentence, told the offender, that provided he was a man of honour, he would bring a friend with him, and follow into the next room, which said, he himself quitted the apartment, accompanied by a notorious duellist. The Spaniard was in much too angry a mood to listen to the language of prudence, had any one been disposed to preach it to him; but we had no preacher of this sort here, consequently no attempt was made to prevent him following the challenger into an adjoining apartment, which he promptly did, accompanied by another broken down Spanish gambler.

The challenger's second in this duel was the master of the house, and he was never without proper arms by him, therefore, as soon as the pair of dons had entered the apartment, he, in a most business-like manner, without wasting a word in conversation, locked the door, and laid a brace of pistols and two swords on the table, when the Spaniard being offered his choice of weapons, selected the latter, and the parties set to fighting with great determination; but the Spaniard was too angry to combat well, consequently he soon exhausted his strength, and his antagonist taking advantage of the circumstance, made a furious longe, by which he passed the point of his sword through the don's body.

The laws at Genoa were severe against duelling, and every one else fled the scene of action, leaving me only of the party with the apparently dying man, whom feelings of humanity would not permit me to forsake in his melancholy situation; but my philanthropy led me into a scrape, inasmuch as the officers of justice entered the house while I was rendering service to the wounded gentleman, and made me their prisoner. I, however, deeming liberty too great a

treasure to be wantonly sacrificed, bribed the chief policeman with a purse of money, and he consequently winked at my escape, when I at once quitted the town, to stay retired in a neighbouring village, without even revisiting my own mansion previous to my departure. "What's the use of a good character to a man like me," said I, apostrophizing while I was quitting the city; "there will be no possibility of retaining it after this new affair, unless, indeed, by making my purse bleed in the way I did before." The don, though he lingered for some time in a very precarious state, eventually recovered of his wound. But the officers of justice, during this period of suspense, strove to secure my person, and all the busy characters of the town said I was highly deserving of blame in the affair, and ought to be put on my trial.

My good spouse, who, I have said, was in a delicate state of health, took to heart the catastrophe attending this new adventure, and as every one who is in trouble seeks to alleviate it in the best manner they can, she, poor woman, sought consolation during the time of my retirement from home in the sweets of converse with several staid ladies of her acquaintance.

There is danger in every thing. One of these dames, a delicate nervous lady, who imagined she could not exist without having recourse to the use of medicine, but whom the learned disciples of Galen knew to be a good annuitant to them, whom it would be ruinous to their interests to lose, in the fervour of her zeal was constantly recommending a medical practitioner to my wife, who, she affirmed, would infallibly restore her to health.

The firmest mind is liable to be shaken by persuasion; but in sickness, resolution usually departs from us, and we become the creatures of fear. Poor, weak objects, ready to receive the doctor's potion. Mrs. Winpenny was an example of this, for teazed by the importunity of her well-meaning friend, in an evil hour she consented to call in a medical practitioner.

The professional gentleman speedily loaded the shelves of my wife's chamber with his mixtures, and continued to send more even when she was on the verge of the grave; but at length, finding her case desperate, he called to his assistance a most famous physician, and this scientific character summoned another still more renowned, when, as if in defiance of their learned conferences and joint endeavours to prolong the amiable woman's life, nature gave way, and she unfortunately breathed her last.

CHAPTER XXV.

"The picture's as it first was drawn,
I've varied neither shade or form,
And it will please, I'm not afraid,
When Time has mellow'd every shade."

"How thick and friendly lie the mingled groves,
Distinguished only by some sculptur'd guide."

"Fatal effects of luxury and ease!
We drink our poison, and we eat disease."

I FELT sincerely grieved at the death of my wife, who certainly was an excellent woman, and had acted with uniform kindness towards me. By her decease I became absolute master of all her property, and what appeared to me surprising, although she had distant relations living in the neighbourhood of Genoa, she never by word of mouth, or written document, had expressed a desire to me to bequeath them anything; however, on reflecting upon the circumstance of my having possession of the whole of her estate, I resolved, in honour to her memory, to divide a certain sum amongst her relatives. Accordingly, I invited them to the funeral, and afterwards distributed three thousand ducats, in sums proportionate to their consanguinity, giving them to understand that in doing this I only fulfilled her wish.

The funeral being over, and my affairs in Genoa satisfactorily settled, I called upon the Spanish gentleman, mentioned as having lost his money at play, and been wounded in his duel with a gamester, and proffered him pecuniary assistance—an offer he availed himself of, which afforded me much pleasure, as happily I had now become a changed man, inasmuch as the detestable passion of avarice had lost its hold on my soul: this was a reformation for which I partly stood indebted to my altered feelings, occasioned by the loss of my wife; yet, what may seem strange, I was still deeper indebted for it to the perseverance of my Kentish servant, in forcing upon me his excellent advice, however disinclined I might be to receive it.

My conduct with regard to my wife, to whom I gave a superb funeral, made me become a favourite with the fair sex, and my generosity shown to her relatives, and also to the unfortunate Spaniard, entirely changed the public opinion regarding me; insomuch that I, whose character had been thought disreputable, suddenly grew into considerable favour; notwithstanding which, I considered it the best policy to quit the republic of Genoa, the country of the great

Columbus; and I decided that my next place of abode should be the city of Parma.

My servant Monday, who had often gone to great lengths to break me of my growing inclination for play, I found to be a young man of determined probity, who had been well educated by his father—a poor curate; therefore, now that I was a single man, I made a complete alteration in my establishment, by promoting this deserving person to the office of my secretary, and discharging the rest of my establishment, except one lackey. By the arrangement now made, I relieved myself from much trouble, for what are unnecessary servants but so many plagues? Ah, and so many masters too, when the proper master relaxes in his authority: this the famous Lord Chancellor Bacon, who could himself so well lay down rules for the guidance of others, to his cost found to be the case, when to pamper his menials he had stooped to take bribes, and, consequently, got himself turned with ignominy out of his high office; and that a single servant is better than a host of them, was the opinion of that keen observer of his species, commonly called Old Elves, the miser, when he declared that the man who would have his business properly done, must keep only *one* domestic, for that if he has two or more it will be badly done. Besides, in promoting Monday to be my secretary, I secured to myself a pleasant and facetious companion, who was very capable of giving me instruction in many things; and this last was a grand point, inasmuch as I felt very desirous of obtaining knowledge, and being sensible of the want of education in my juvenile days, was always indefatigable in my endeavours at learning, having constantly engaged masters, and devoted several hours a day to study, wherever I lived, from the time when I resided in New York to the epoch in question; and thanks to my perseverance in study, and aptitude at acquiring languages, I could now speak something of Italian and French, as well as Spanish.

We had a delightful journey to Parma, and highly was I gratified in viewing the Alps, from where they begin to rise near the mouth of the Var, on the Gulf of Genoa, these truly majestic mountains, which terminate near the Adriatic, after running a course of nearly seven hundred miles. At Parma I took lodgings at the house of a staid matronly lady of fifty, and had the great good luck to form an acquaintance with a justly celebrated Dutch physician, named Von Drick, who likewise lodged in the house. He had come to Parma for the benefit of his health, and been sojourning here several months; his brother physicians having recommended the mild Italian air as the best auxiliary to the old gentleman's constitution, after a recent attack of illness, brought on by cold caught in an observatory, when watching the planets on a winter's night; for besides being a physician, this enterprising scholar was an adept in astronomical knowledge, and what was of more consequence to me, he was an admirable companion, who undertook the office of showing me what was remarkable in and about Parma. A day or two after our arrival, my

secretary and I being out perambulating the city with him, he, after having made the observation that he felt fatigued, as his legs were not so young or powerful as they had been a quarter of a century before, proposed conducting us to an exhibition of pictures, where, he said, he should be enabled to rest his jaded limbs, at the same time, that he gratified his sight by viewing some highly esteemed paintings, as excellent he added, laughingly, as some which were baptized by Pope Benedict the Third.

The proposition was readily agreed to, and our party proceeded to the place in question, when Mynheer Von Drick stopping just within the exhibition-room door, invited our attention to a cluster of four persons, who stood intently engaged in examining a picture, at a remote part of the gallery.

"There," said he, "you behold one of the genuine pictures of life."

"With the primest spy glass ever manufactured by Dolland, I couldn't make out which of these many pieces of handicraft is better than the one along side of it; for d'ye see, sir, paints and patchwork make a crazy old frigate look new and handsome to the eye," observed Monday, with a smile.

"You mistake me," answered the physician, "I spoke of a picture of life, not a painting upon canvass. Yonder group consists of three rogues, who call themselves connoisseurs of paintings, together with their dupe, a man in all respects as roguish as the connoisseurs—although, in this instance, deservedly the victim of his own avariciousness; but indubitably in this world there is a moral principle at work, which sooner or later makes injustice the parent of its own punishment: however, to bring a long tale into narrow bounds, it will suffice to tell that this dupe is an English tutor, who, after practising innumerable tricks at the expense of his country people, contrived to take French leave of his native land with no less than five thousand pounds in his pocket, belonging to a charitable institution, of which, by his devout conduct, shown in regularly attending divine service at a dissenter's meeting-house, he had got himself appointed the treasurer. Besides which booty, he crossed the British Channel with two thousand pounds' worth of jewellery in his possession, the property of divers tradesmen, who had unhesitatingly intrusted this *saintly* character with it, on his promise to show the same to an old dowager of title, one of his patronesses, and exert his persuasive powers to get her to purchase a part or the whole of the jewels; in which case, the *honest* traders were to allow this agent of theirs a commission of twenty-five per cent. on the produce of the goods vended by him.

"With a heavy pocket, but a light heart, the conscientious tutor arrived in Paris, where by means of tricks practised in gaming, he, after playing for two years, succeeded in more than doubling his property; but the hero being now detected in the act of cheating, was kicked out of a numerous company, and in consequence of this insult and exposure found it requisite to quit the metropolis of

France, without venturing to show his face again among the playing world.

"He who possesses wealth in abundance, and keeps himself out of the clutches of the law, may set the whole world at defiance. This gentleman's company has been much courted ever since he has been here, and to this city it was he came immediately after his flight from Paris; but over-covetousness will soon be the means of stripping him of his wealth, when he will have nought save unavailing regret to remember it by. In fine, after gathering a fortune together by fraud, he has become a dupe—to the scoundrels standing around him; they have succeeded in getting him to lay out his money in pictures, purchased on the strength of their judgment, and, moreover, made him believe that on the sale of them he will realize a profit of two or three hundred per cent.

"Almost the whole of the *ci-divant* tutor's capital is now invested in this way, and however incredible it may seem, he is taught to believe his paintings are the works of the best masters; indeed, such is his weakness on this head, that thinking *they* cannot sufficiently ornament the walls of their palaces without having recourse to him, he lives in hourly expectation of receiving tenders of large sums for some of his daubs, from royal and other illustrious personages of Europe; yet, in plain truth, most of his paintings are so bad, as scarcely to be worth the frames which contain them, and assuredly, if they should be brought to the hammer, they will produce only a small per centage on the cash he has expended on them. The connoisseurs," added the physician, "have done their work *a merveille*, in return for the douceur of twenty per cent. they receive on the purchase money of pictures bought by their dupe; however, now that I've given you an insight into the art and mystery of connoisseurship, we shall do well to go and seat ourselves near to the party, that we may benefit by their critical observations on paintings."

Accordingly we seated ourselves on a bench, at a proper distance, to overhear what the connoisseurs might say, and were gratified by listening to the following discourse:—

"See the exquisite beauty of this *attitude*," said one fellow, pointing with a pencil to the limbs of a male figure; "how plainly it shows the action in which the man is engaged; how perfect must be the painter's knowledge of *ponderation*, and all that refers to the centre of gravity. He has not departed from *probability*, but supported the character of his *figure*, and diffused wonderful beauty over its action."

"See the *casting of the draperies*," observed a second connoisseur; "do not the folds appear rather the result of chance, than of labour, study, or art? This style of painting, with truth, is denominated *the grand*; the *folds of the draperies* are great, and few as possible, because their rich simplicity is more susceptible of great lights. Good heavens! what an error some painters fall into by designing *draperies* heavy and cumbersome, when they ought to

suit the figures with a combination of grandeur and ease. *Contrast, order, and variety* of folds and stuffs constitute the elegance of *draperies;* and *diversity* of colours in those stuffs contribute to the harmony of the whole."

"How admirably the *chiaro-scuro* is contrived," said the third puffer; "by what artful management the lights of the several objects are thrown on one side, and their darkness on the other."

"The picture is *charged*," said the first; "the excesses somewhat adulterate the truth; yet they cannot but be commended, for they soften many things to the eye."

"The *contour* is judiciously managed," observed the second.

"It has marks of age equal to pictures done in *distemper*," said the third, "and yet it exposes none of the *dryness* of the early painters in oil."

"The *costume* shows the action to have passed at Athens, and the people to have been barbarians," said the first.

"On the whole, the *design* may be pronounced elegant, and the *perspective* good," observed the second.

"The painter is happy in giving *grace* to his picture," said the third.

"Although the artist has adhered to nature and truth in most parts of his fine picture, yet there is a touch of the *grotesque* in yon distance," rejoined the second, pointing with his finger.

"This painter has all the *elegance* of Correggio, without a touch of his incorrectness of *design*," said the first.

"What *expression* is shown in that female face," exclaimed the second.

"'Tis incomparable; *agitation* is strongly marked there," said the third.

"I much admire the *contrast* in the position of those figures," observed the first connoisseur, pointing to two of the group.

"The painter may be said to show *correctness*," added the second.

"The colours are local," said the third.

"The *linear perspective* is excellent," remarked the first.

"The *site* well chosen," said the second.

"The *outline* is admirable; 'tis fine as it can be drawn," observed the third.

To relate more of this conversation is unnecessary, it being sufficient to say the connoisseurs carried their point. They even alarmed the tutor's fears, by telling him an English nobleman was desirous of purchasing the picture, and in short so worked upon him, that he deputed one of his fraternity to make an offer on his part of two-thirds of the price asked for the painting; or in other words, to make it his, in return for one thousand pounds.

This was the last thousand this speculating gentleman had to dispose of, for fourteen had been already paid away for pictures; and though the owner of the one now bid for had put the nominal price of fifteen hundred pounds upon it, the intrinsic value, or rather

market price of the same, being only somewhere about fifty pounds, caused the tutor to have his princely offer accepted, and the painting consequently added to his other purchases.

In concluding, may be mentioned here some events which subsequently befel these picture dealers, and also their dupe on the present occasion.

The connoisseurs, after achieving this successful feat, in all Parma were unable to procure another wealthy dupe to their snares; therefore, after making vain efforts in several other towns of Italy, they proceeded to that never-failing mart for designing characters—the British metropolis. There they speedily found employ for their ingenuity. A sort of an old woman, a military baronet, notorious for ignorance of his profession, exemplified at the expense of his country, by his blundering mistakes when commanding an army, but who possessed more money than wit, engaged them in his service, that he might benefit by their advice when enlarging his collection of pictures, and by their assistance this job was executed so very judiciously, that the general's heir-at-law deplores the hour his weak ancestor became known to our wily connoisseurs.

As to the tutor, his buoyant hopes soon gave way to despair. Disappointment and poverty opened his eyes to admit the light of truth, and he became thoroughly sensible that the potentates of Europe could sufficiently adorn the walls of their palaces without having recourse to his pictures. Unfortunately, however, for him, the restoration of reason on this point was accompanied by a return of his inclination for gaming, and he visited the tables of play in the hope of gathering together, at the expense of persons less designing than himself, a sum equal to what he had lost by his pictures. Fortune, true to her accustomed way of treating distressed mortals, proved inimical to his views, and our tutor got stript of the last shilling of his money, when, as a dernier resource, he sent his paintings to an auction, and in conformity to Mynheer Von Drick's prophecy, received back somewhere about one shilling in the pound of what they cost him.

This supply disappointing the gentleman's expectations, he made a desperate effort at the gaming table, and, to use the language of a gamester, "got cleaned out;" after which he contrived to get himself conveyed to England as a pauper, where settling himself in a country town, his psalm-singing countenance and sanctified air so won upon the hearts of the congregation at a meeting-house, which he never failed attending, that they appointed him their clerk; but further honours certainly await him, as several wealthy dowagers have voluntarily offered to be his securities, and the whole of the congregation promised to support him on the ballot at an approaching election for the office of tax gatherer; some other good dames, however, insist upon it that our tutor shall become a preacher of the Gospel, for they say they know he is born to be a shining light to the people.

Monday had no sooner retired from the picture gallery, than he

broke out in violent invectives against the connoisseurs and their dupe. "What a lubber the chap must be to give a thousand pounds for a bit of daubed canvass," exclaimed he, shrugging his shoulders. "An old wooden head of a ship is better than his. Who in his senses would be bamboozled out of his money by four common puffers? However, after all, it cheers the honest heart to see the rascal paid in his own coin. He had a Roland for his Oliver. He bamboozled the public charity, as well as the jewellers, out of their property, and now he is properly bamboozled himself." "You have justly remarked," said I to the physician, "that the characters we have so recently quitted, furnish a genuine picture of life."

"Over-covetousness, sir, generally bursts the bag," remarked my secretary with a smile. On the following day, Mynheer Von Drick, accompanied by a farmer of the neighbourhood, his acquaintance, took my secretary and me to visit an Englishman, residing several miles from Parma; and, as the weather was beautiful, and the old gentleman thought walking exercise would be beneficial to him, we were induced to make our little journey on foot.

We had not proceeded far from the town, ere the farmer, pointing to a yew tree, in a burial-ground, said, "Beneath yon tree sleeps my worthy uncle, and there, my friends, at some future day, shall I near to him be taking my lasting repose." "Ha, my friend," observed the physician, "even so must it be with us all. Death, then, is a suitable subject for meditation; in the royal palace and in the poor-house, in the hall of festivity and in the dwelling of wretchedness, in the prison house and in the bed of down, it is an oft-recurring object: the perusal of gravestones afford the best check for a fit of ambition." "Yes," remarked my secretary, "death shows the vanity of human projects; blasts man's fondest hopes, and cuts off his career in the sunshine of his glory. Like the liquid tract left behind her, by a vessel sailing on her course, so the grave of man smooths over, and the life of the one and the tract of the other are alike forgotten." "Death is the universal doom," rejoined Von Drick; "its empire extends over every class, denomination, and sex; its summons demands prompt attendance, and its edict is irrevocable. Of all tyrants, it is the only one mortality finds no possibility of hiding itself from. Death, however, is just. He who longest escapes from its embrace, is doomed to the greatest portion of misery; yet death, in its perfect justice, spares no class of mortals; but, as the Latin poet quaintly says,

> "With equal pace, impartial fate
> Knocks at the palace and the cottage gate."

"Happily for the broken-hearted, the incurable sick, and many other sufferers, it is even so," said the farmer. A silence of some minutes followed the last observation, when our party having approached near to the churchyard, beheld a young man, seated upon the ground, at the head of a newly sodded grave. "The grave is a test of affection," now observed the physician; "it is the ordeal for

trying the sincerity and fervency of our passions. That young man, in all probability, is a lover, and his mistress, who late was blooming and kind, lies beneath yon turf food for loathsome worms. In fine, the grave makes manifest whether the soul really cherishes a fond regard for the memory, or feels cold indifference at the loss of the departed." "Right, my friend, is your conjecture," replied the farmer. "Yon youth loved a fair maiden, the belle of a neighbouring village: he courted her, his vows were accepted, and the day was fixed upon for their marriage, when, unfortunately, his betrothed caught the scarlet fever, which soon numbered her with the things that have perished. The poor lad has been inconsolable ever since the maiden's death, and the whole neighbourhood feel pity for him, for he is one of the few persons that are beloved by every body: moreover, he is a youth of respectable talents, and has written various pretty sonnets to his mistress, which have procured him the title of the village poet." "If this be the case," rejoined the physician, "we have only to substitute the word mansions for that of nations, to say of him, as of Orpheus,

> "Love strong as death, the poet led
> To the pale mansions of the dead."

Just as the farmer, who led the van, was in the act of stepping over the style into the churchyard, the youth arose from off the grave, and first casting a look denotive of anguish towards us, intruders on his melancholy visit, abruptly turned round and departed with a hasty step, by the opposite side of the burial-ground.

"Go, poor youth," uttered the physician, "words of comfort, intended to afford thee consolation, would only add to the bitterness of thy regret, which time alone can subdue. The budding rose, snatched from thee by unsparing death, may yet be replaced by a lovely flower. Youth has every thing to hope for." Sweetbriar had been planted over the maiden's grave. "There," said the physician, pointing to the prickly bush, "there is the true emblem of love: the flower is temptingly sweet, but the thorn piercingly sharp!"

From respect to the farmer, we all paused for a short time at the grave of his much-lamented uncle, and while we did so, the worthy man picked several stones from off the grass growing over it, and threw them over the burial-ground fence. The party of us now proceeded on our road, and, engaged in rational conversation, beguiled the time away. "Age steals upon man like a thief, and infirmities march in its train; but, in spite of them all, a good conscience is a continued feast," said the physician, musingly, as he trudged along. At length, pointing out a neat cottage, almost embosomed in trees, on a beautiful slope of ground, he exclaimed, "That is my friend's residence."

"It stands on a lovely spot," observed Monday; "Virgil nor Cicero could have chosen more appropriately for the place of their

studies." "The learned men you mention stood in high favour with the great of their days, and enjoyed ample shares of the rich gifts of fortune; but my friend, who is a literary character, as were those famed Romans, and moreover was born and bred a gentleman, possesses only a bare competency to exist upon.

While Von Drick was yet speaking, a gentleman, apparently verging on his fiftieth year, from behind a cluster of shrubs made his appearance, when bowing to the party, he assured Mynheer Von Drick that he felt great pleasure at so unexpectedly seeing him and his friends at his humble retreat.

"My friends here," said the physician, introducing Monday and me to Captain English, "readily quitted the city this morning to enjoy a country walk, and have the pleasure of making your acquaintance."

"This humble threshold is not often crossed by a strange footstep," replied he, "therefore the honour conferred on me by your bringing friends here, will be the higher estimated; but ceremony damps welcome; come, let me show you into the cottage."

His residence was literally what the captain had denominated it: even that arbitrary minister who first taxed the windows through which heaven's light finds its way into the abode of men, could have made no more of it. It was but a cottage; yet, in its mistress, who was the wife of a gentleman then away from home, who joined in housekeeping with Captain English, it held a treasure worthy of any palace.

"Madam Susan," said the captain, introducing his guests to this accomplished lady, "I must leave it to your good offices, to show such hospitality, as may induce these gentlemen to visit us again."

"The best this humble cot affords shall be at the service of your friends," said the lady, curtseying. Captain English now gave us so hearty a welcome, that the party accepted of his invitation to dinner, and while the meal was being prepared, we all accompanied our host in taking a rural walk, which proved highly gratifying, for it was over a country beautifully intersected by the varieties afforded by agriculture, intermingled with wood, and enriched by a meandering stream.

"His humble abode and narrow circumstances brought no disgrace on Fabricius," said our host, while his guests were seating themselves at his board, "therefore, surely, I need make no apologies, when I place before you the best refreshments this cotage affords."

"History allows no credit to Fabricius for epicurism," said I, smiling, as I viewed the neatness of the dishes displayed on the board, and scented the delicious odours arising from the choice viands.

The fair housekeeper smiled at this indirect compliment paid to her; but the physician added to it, by saying, that at Captain English's home, by culinary skill, the good things of life were made

the most of. "This is the handywork of a good housewife, I'll take on me to warrant," observed Monday, in a half whisper to me.

"By Uranus, and all the celestial planets, I vow these delicious viands endanger my life," soon as he had dined, exclaimed Mynheer Von Drick, thrusting his plate further from him with one hand, and unbuttoning the bottom button of his waistcoat with the other.

"A bumper of Burgundy will assist the gastric juice in digesting your food," said his host smiling, and filling his friend's glass.

"Professed gastronomers would not be satisfied with paying a single visit at this table," was my remark to the hostess; "your cookery, madam, would create fresh zests to their palates."

"The gluttons would destroy themselves by eating; I'll warrant they would make a Norwegian dinner of it," said my secretary, laughing.

"Permit me, sir, to inquire in what may consist the peculiarities of a Norwegian dinner?" asked the lady.

"In extreme gluttony, I'm sorry to say, madam. However, the better to satisfy your curiosity, I will, provided it is agreeable to the company, give you some little account of a Norwegian dinner, at which, when a stripling, it was my luck to be present."

Here the gentlemen of the party expressed a desire to hear what the sailor secretary had to say, and the lady assured him she should feel herself much his debtor for the promised relation of what happened at his northern feast, after which he resumed as follows:—

"You must know, madam, that when I was a youngster, learning the art of seamanship, I was 'prentice to Captain Bowling, of the Water Lily; and one voyage, when we were on our way home from the frozen regions of the north, after we had been drove about by gales from every quarter, and had our bowsprit snapped away by an iceberg, all the crew of us were made happy as so many princes by our reaching Norway, for there we found safe anchorage and good shelter from the gale.

"Now, madam, to give every country its due, I must inform you that the Norwegians are an hospitable set of people, none more so perhaps on the face of our globe. Captain Bowling was invited to dine with the governor of the place as soon as we had got safe into port, and he thought proper to take me with him to this noble commodore's house.

"The governor, as they call him, received us very courteously, and according to the custom of the country, made us partake of some brandy and cheese, as a whet to strengthen our appetites for dinner. The cloth had been laid for our meal before we arrived, and on it was displayed a plate, knife and fork, and a wine-glass, with a bottle of claret beside it, for each individual of the company, while in the middle of the table there stood a large handsome glass castor of sugar, ornamented with a magnificent silver cover. Every nation has its peculiar customs, and the Nor-

wegians, I should observe to you, madam, are not in the habit of drinking either malt liquor or water with their meals, nor is it customary with them to have salt or mustard on the table.

" Soon after we had done whetting our appetites, dinner was brought in, that it to say, one dish at a time. The first was a large tureen of cherry soup, which is well known to be a favourite addition to the dinners of the richer people, and, besides, a profusion of cherries and milk; this had in it sago, claret, and raisins, all boiled together so as to have made a complete mucilage of the mixture.

" We were each of us helped to two brimming full soup plates of this mess, which we ate without knowing if anything more was to come; but no sooner had the tureen disappeared, than two large salmons, boiled and cut in slices, were brought upon the board; and, as an accompaniment, came melted butter, mixed with vinegar and pepper, which looked the very counterpart of oil.

" Though it was a queer mixture to look at, the sauce served well to make us relish the salmon; yet when we had with difficulty cleared our plates of the large messes of fish the governor had given us, we began to think we had taken cargo enough on board, and so we hoped we had seen the end of our dinner; but there we were wofully out of our reckoning.

" There was now introduced a large tureen, filled with eggs of the goose or great tern, boiled hard, almost as bullets, of which, to our discomforture, half-a-dozen were placed on each of our plates; and for sauce to them, there was a large basin of cream, mixed with sugar, in which spoons were put for the whole party, so we all had to eat it out of the same measure.

" When I had distressed nature by forcing upon my stomach the greater part of my eggs, I begged to be excused eating any more, and in consideration of my being a youngster, was allowed to give in; but the captain petitioned in vain to be spared eating the whole of his monstrous eggs. 'You are my guest,' said the old governor, 'and this is the first time you have done me the honour of coming here, therefore no excuse can be admitted, you must do as I would have you; in future, when you visit me, you may act as you like.'

" The captain, finding there was no remedy for the evil, put on as pleasant a countenance as he could under such circumstances, and with some difficulty contrived to force the remainder of his eggs and a portion more cream down his throat; but no sooner had he accomplished this feat, than half a well-roasted sheep was brought in, with a mess of sorrel, dandelion, and scurvy-grass, and which was boiled, mashed, and sweetened with sugar.

" Poor Captain Bowling at sight of these last dishes made sundry wry faces, and to be excused partaking of them pleaded his age, and declared he had already eat more than could possibly do him good; but in spite of all he could say, he was doomed to see his plate

crammed with mutton and sauce, and he was made get through it as well as he could; yet each person's allowance of any one of the dishes we had partaken of, was amply sufficient for the dinner of a healthy man.

"A large dish of *gauffres*, which is a sort of pancakes, made of wheat-flour, flat, and baked in a mould, succeeded to the mutton: these were about half an inch in thickness, and the size of an octavo book. The governor said he would be content if Captain Bowling eat two of them, and he, poor fellow, was obliged to comply. Norway biscuits and rye-loaves served as the bread for our repast; the sole drink was claret, of which the captain was forced to empty two or three bottles, put in succession beside him.

"Coffee was served up after the pastry had been demolished, and this gave us hopes that the feast would terminate here; but it was not so; much to the captain's consternation, all was not over yet.

"A plate of apples and a large bowl of rum punch now appeared, when three large apples were forced on each of us, and the punch was handed round pretty freely, in long ale glasses, and a toast given each time they were filled.

"By the time the bowl had got drained of its contents, the captain was hard up, *chock and block*, as we sailors say, madam; indeed, he would not have then known which way the wind blew, even though the compass had been put before his eyes; and yet the unmerciful old governor threatened him with another bowl. Luckily, however, at this time one of the boat's crew made his appearance, to say the boat was ready, and the rest of her crew aboard waiting for him; but notwithstanding this agreeable summons, and that he felt he was nigh bursting with repletion, my commander was compelled, by his over-hospitable host, to swallow three cups of tea before he parted. 'I can't help compassionating your gorging aldermen, whenever I think of the misery a man may bring on himself by over-eating,' now said the sailor, laughingly. Captain Bowling, for example, was so greatly inconvenienced by his debauch, that we had no little difficulty in conveying him to the boat, and we were absolutely forced to hoist him aboard ship. Three days elapsed before he recovered from the effects of his involuntary intemperance, and during this time he loathed the very sight of food; but the captain took especial good care never to venture putting his foot ashore again at that place, and soon as the gale lulled, for fear of being honoured by another invitation to dine with the old commodore, he weighed anchor and put to sea, declaring, at the same time, that he would much rather be caught in another gale, than undergo the misery he had endured by going ashore."

His female auditor thanked Monday for the description he had given of a Norwegian dinner, and smilingly remarked, that his story afforded a convincing proof that hospitality is best evinced by

leaving visitors to act according to their pleasure; when, in reply, Monday said that he heartily concurred with her; and in his opinion, the old proverb, of "enough being as good as a feast," was a crasy one, inasmuch as "enough is a feast."

When the fair housekeeper had adjourned to prepare coffee, and the gentlemen were enjoying themselves over some fine flavoured old wine, Captain English, in reply to a compliment the physician paid him on the snugness and comfort pervading this sylvan establishment, of which he made one, observed, "that the life of man is a kind of dream, subject to this remarkable peculiarity, that it depends mainly upon man himself whether his dream shall be a pleasant one; therefore," he added, "schooled as he had been to the knowledge of this truth by adversity, reverses of fortune, and innumerable disappointments, it behoved him to take a page from the book of wisdom, and make the best of things; following Epictetus's wise maxim, 'to bear and forbear.'"

"Yours, my good sir, is the true philosophy," observed my secretary. "Practice at all times is preferable to theory. Out of the multitudes who preach from pulpits, or deliver discourses in senate houses, few are to be found who practise their own precepts: even Seneca, by his conduct, belied his."

"Your observations on philosophy are rigidly true," rejoined our host; "but as my history may not be altogether uninteresting, I will, provided the good company think fit to hear it, now relate the tale of my misfortunes."

We all thanked Captain English for his agreeable offer, and expressed ourselves desirous of hearing his history, on which, he related what follows.

CHAPTER XXVI.

" I long
To hear the story of your life,
which must
Take the ear strangely !"

" I'll deliver all."

" Innocence, alive to shame,
Sinks down oppress'd by guilt's mere name.
Thus, when the orb of day doth rise,
Flooding with light, earth, sea, and skies;
While less pure objects 'scape the glow,
Yielding though spotless lies the snow."

Zoroaster says, " An opportunity for doing mischief offers a hundred times a day, for doing good only once in a year;" therefore he advises man to make an early reparation for the wrongs he has done his fellow-man.

" THE parentage of an humble individual can be interesting to no persons save his kindred, therefore I shall say no more concerning mine, than that my father was an English gentleman, in easy circumstances, whose pride it was to declare not one of his ancestors had been a sinecurist, a parson, or a law officer, nor in any way fingered one shilling of the public money.

" This parent, however, unfortunately for me, died while I was a child, and a kind mother had me educated for some few years at a collegiate school; but this I quitted at the early age of fourteen, to proceed to Africa and the East Indies: of the latter, I visited the chief city of each of the three presidencies, as also two of those of the island of Ceylon; but bad health compelled me to return to my native land, at the expiration of two years. Of my travels in Africa, I recollect nothing worthy of being made mention on this occasion.

" The war carried on between France and my native country at this time was waged with vindictive fury; and after I had got restored to health, to gratify my wishes, which were speedily to serve the state in a military capacity, a commission in a regiment serving in Egypt was purchased; but, before I could join it, the preliminaries of a peace were signed, when shortly afterwards, by purchase, I obtained a lieutenancy in the army, and was soon reduced upon half-pay.

"The peace proved of short duration, and eager for military service, soon as war had been proclaimed, I paid a round sum of money as a difference to get replaced on full-pay; when, now under the command of the noble-hearted Sir John Moore, and other favourite officers of the day, I passed some of the choicest years of my life. Promotion to a company in a light infantry corps fell to my lot after six years' service; but to this corps I was destined to belong for half-a-score years, and then, as will be seen, to be juggled out of active service in the army.

"With my last regiment I served at the taking of Copenhagen, in the Spanish peninsula, the Netherlands, and in Holland, and while belonging to it, I was selected on several occasions to take charge of the depôt companies, and manage its recruiting service—duties I fulfilled so highly to the satisfaction of the Duke of York, the commander-in-chief, that he several times notified his approbation of my conduct, and frequently promised me promotion.

"The cup does not always reach the lip for which it seems intended. This was verified in my case: deceived by promises, and long compelled to remain in charge of the regimental depôt, I was doomed to see sundry junior officers promoted by brevet over my head; but there was no redress to be obtained, a military man's business being only to obey.

"Little minds are the most vindictive. A tyrannical officer, whom I served under, the major of a light infantry corps, used frequently to exclaim, 'O that mine enemy had written a book.' This now became my case. I committed this egregious act of folly; insanity, it may be called, in a military man who aspires to promotion. In a word, a soldier's intellects his military companions estimate according to his rank; therefore, for a junior officer to execute any performance that can be construed as arrogating to himself more knowledge than is professed by his superior, is a crime too heinous to be forgiven. I sinned twofold: I wrote a book of poetry, as also one in prose; the latter, too, was a military one, and dedicated, by his sanction, to the commander-in-chief.

"A military expedition, which called for the effective soldiers under my command, being ordered to Holland, I gladly seized the opportunity of embarking; and yet my health was unequal to the undertaking, for I had only recently recovered from a severe attack of dropsy. The campaign which followed was made in the severest winter known in the memory of man, and though I weathered it, my sufferings from the cold were most severe.

"Man lives in blindness to the future; yet my reward was such as I anticipated. Nothing was achieved on this campaign worthy of winning the corporal's stripe to a soldier's arm; and yet such is interest, that a captain under my own command, many

years my junior in rank, got himself promoted, by brevet rank, over my head.

"I complained not of this grievance, for complaint against injustice, inflicted by the hand of military rule, I knew to be unavailing as the wind wasting its strength against a granite rock; but that no fair effort of mine might be wanting to gain promotion, I volunteered my services to lead a storming party, and was in consequence employed to command a detachment of troops intended as such. However, just as we were on the eve of assaulting a certain fortress, the news of Buonaparte's abdication of his thrones reached our army, and thereby spared me the mortification of then seeing another favourite officer or two promoted over my head.

"Napoleon's abdication having restored peace to exhausted Europe, I obtained a few days' leave of absence, and presented myself at the Horse Guards, thoroughly disgusted with the service, where I signified my intention of retiring from the army; but Sir Henry Torrens, the military secretary, *reasoned* me out of my purpose, by an assurance that the commander-in-chief felt warmly inclined to serve me, and waited only a fair opportunity—an assurance backed by his advice, for his words were 'for God's sake don't retire, you little dream of the honours awaiting you!'

"I rejoined my regiment in Flanders, and remained with it until Napoleon re-appeared in France, and like the god of light broke through the clouds enveloping him. At Menin, a fine opportunity was afforded me for contemplating the contemptible weakness of monarchic power, unsupported by the goodwill of the people. Louis the Eighteenth of France, who, like the rest of his family, could not be taught that the more merit prevails over titles the more flourishing is the state, and who only a few days previous had appeared firmly seated on his throne, here entered the Netherlands a fugitive, with a heart wrung by grief, and tears streaming from his eyes. Forsaken by all his leading officers of state, who, apeing sunflowers, turned their faces to the invigorating deity of the day, the decrepid monarch had learnt the melancholy truth, 'that courtiers are friends, who inwardly swear only to flatter power.'

"Every British soldier that could be spared from other quarters was now hurried away into Belgium, there to be united in one army with the Dutch, Hanoverians, Brunswickers, and Flemings, to be commanded by fortune's favourite, and supported by armies of Prussians, Wurtembergians, Austrians, Poles, Russians, Swedes, Danes, and hordes of Cossacks, all preparing for the field to unite their endeavours for hurling Napoleon from the throne on which he had *unmolestedly* reseated himself.

"Among the troops wafted over the British Channel into Belgium were the three battalions of my regiment, therefore the provisional one, with which I had been serving, being formed of companies belonging to the others, was now broken up; but instead

of joining my own battalion at Brussels, which was commanded by a court favourite, who to judge by his conduct towards me is illiberal and narrow-minded, I was unexpectedly sent to a frontier town, to officiate there as a judge-advocate.

"He who suspects not is easily overcome; like an unskilful swordsman he guards his head and receives a death wound at his heart. In few words, to sum up a tale of complicated grievances, it is only necessary to add, that while I was on detached duty, Napoleon made that rapid advance into Belgium, which precipitately brought on the battle of Waterloo; and that I, misled by the erroneous information given me by every superior officer I fell in with on my route across the country, respecting the head-quarters of an army, known perhaps to no mortal away from them save only those immediately to the rear, proceeded to the divisions of troops in position near the town of Halle, instead of to the main army, with which my regiment happened to be serving.

"This untoward event prevented me from participating in the honours of this famed battle; but though I was no more deserving of blame on the occasion than I should have been if away in the East Indies, it gave my malignant enemies a glorious opportunity for persecuting me, and this was so effectually done by promoting officers over my head—refusing me every kind of justice—and deceiving me by means of a false, though an official assertion, made in the name of my regimental commanding officer—a man whom I had met retiring from the battle's din with a slight wound, that unfortunately I became their dupe, and in a moment of indignant anger signified my willingness to quit the corps and retire upon half-pay.

"Injustice always finds a pretext to palliate her actions. I was not permitted to recall the declaration wrung from me by fraudful misrepresentation; but with a constitution materially injured in the service of my country, I now quitted a profession wherein long and faithful attention, active zeal, good conduct, and talent, too often serve as subordinate recommendations for obtaining promotion when brought in competition with the favour of commanders enjoying their temporary sway. In fact, the system acted upon since the unavailing battle of Barrossa, of granting brevet rank at the recommendation of capricious officers in command over troops in the field, is of a nature to destroy the military spirit by creating well-grounded dissatisfaction; indeed, such had been my feeling on this subject, that had this rank been proffered me out of my proper turn, I should have spurned it as an insult on all senior unbreveted officers of my own rank.

"A man who, confiding in his own wisdom, deviates from the straight path to travel on one he thinks points more direct to his wishes, generally blunders on that which leads to his disappointment. None of my many memorials to royalty and commanders-in-chief have been of any avail in getting my wrongs in-

vestigated; and almost immediately after my quitting the army, from a circumstance purely accidental, I was led into speculations at the Stock Exchange, where I was doomed to learn that a man to thrive at that sink of iniquity, ought to commence his operations *without* a moneyed capital. Success at the Stock Exchange rarely rewards openness and honour, but usually is the follower of selfish misrepresentation and other low artifice.

" Indeed, of all the species of gaming, that of '*time bargains*,' by which the great fortunes are lost and won at the Stock Exchange, is the most destructive. In its effects it is even more deadly than the infernal game of *rouge et noir*: at the latter, the wretched victim can lose no more than the money he has ready to expose on the gaming table; but '*time bargains*' precipitate him into losses which oblige him to sell, not only the property he is in possession of, but that also which he is entitled to in reversion; and when all has been done, they leave him a defaulter on his speculations, and pennyless for the residue of his miserable life. This is one of the many frightful consequences of a national debt; and let the culprits be who they may, glad shall I be to record my opinion that the administration which creates a never-to-be-paid-off national debt, like Erostratus, should be mentioned in history amidst flames, ruin, lamentations, and tears.

" At the time I was deprived of my military situation and right of promotion, I learnt the value of military friendship; from that day old brother officers and I *affected* to have forgotten each other's faces. A novice in worldly affairs might have imagined we had all taken hearty draughts of the waters of Lethe; for even a politic general officer, who dined with me only a day or two preceding our last sanguinary contest, though among courtiers famed for his *coup d'œil*, after this event could not discern me when we ran against each other in the streets.

" Misfortune or loss seldom comes single, but one succeeds another, like the billows of the sea; and in the tide of misfortune, men are in a few days more overwhelmed by the waves of trouble and danger, than they can in the ebb of many years free themselves from. This was my case at the Stock Exchange; I was speedily stripped of all my funded property, and then, in the vain hope of recovering my first loss, I disposed of my land; the produce of which, it is almost superfluous to say, passed into the same hands as my other property. Now, I was taught that misfortune is the thermometer that marks the coldness of friends. My moneyed acquaintances suddenly became short-sighted, precisely in the manner my military friends had been stricken with that deplorable failing. Fortunately, the voice of reason now whispered me that the more a man is ill-treated by the world, the greater is the necessity of his loving himself, to enable him to soar above it and its prejudices; consequently, although the grievous losses and disappointments I had met with could not be otherwise than distressing to my mind, yet, notwithstanding, I felt

them as a man, I sunk not under them, but bore them as a man ought to bear the galling burden imposed by trouble. The door of death I knew was open to me by suicide, and my opinion was that man should either live contentedly or pass its portal; but though I doubted my ability to exist as that wise man did, to an extreme old age, under an accumulated load of pain, affliction, and penury, yet I reverenced, as I still do, the advice of the stoic Epictetus, where he recommends patience and forbearance under all pressures; and, therefore, animated with the hope of closing the drama in a more laudable way than by forcibly ejecting the vital spark, I departed not out of life.

"Patience not unfrequently is rewarded with unlooked-for success, and after I endured my misfortunes for more than the ordinary term of an apprenticeship, a new era broke upon me, when my private affairs, owing to the death of a relative, were somewhat amended; but they called me across the Atlantic.

"I now passed away several years of my life amongst the most hospitable, although the most persecuted class, of British subjects, the planters of the West Indies. The jaundiced eye of prejudice is levelled at them, through the misrepresentations of designing sophists, who represent them as barbarous, for employing their well-paid labourers about six hours a day; yet these same sophists are resolutely deaf to the bitter complaints of their own factory children, toiling sixteen hours per diem in rooms at fever heat, for a few pence. Plenty of good land, and liberty to manage their own affairs in their own way, apparently are the two grand causes of the prosperity of thriving colonies; but the erroneous system now pursued is, gradually to take the *liberty* away, and *deprive* the colonists, the only good judges of their own affairs, of their management; and for what? why, to place all under the guidance of an obstinate place-hunting oligarchy thousands of miles distant, who know not how to manage their own poor, and are compelled to act as overwhelming *petitioners* dictate to them. Nor have they yet discovered, that if the spirit of the slave emancipation act be good, their new poor law must be atrocious.

"I quitted the planters with painful sensations, for I felt that their equals for generosity I should never again meet. By way of the United States of America I returned to my native land; but, after sojourning at home for a time, grew weary of compassionating the condition of the numerous blind, who, as if in mockery to the name, had once termed themselves—*my friends;* when (like Xerxes, the famed Persian monarch, while reviewing his army), being unable to look at them without having my heart rent by feelings of pity, I came to the resolution of traversing the British Channel, to live as a rational man, in peaceful content; and this humble cottage, in which you listen to my tale, is the place which I fixed upon for my residence. Adversity, it is said, blunts all the fine feelings of the heart, and leaves us strangers to

that sympathetic tie and tender commiseration which glows in the bosoms of those who are strangers to its pangs; but this assertion is falsified in my case, for I am ever ready to compassionate the unfortunate, and relieve them to the extent warranted by my means.

"Heaven be thanked! the precepts of philosophy have fortified my mind, so as to render powerless the sharp arrows adversity has shot against me; and literary pursuits, combined with rational conversation, serve to make my days glide rapidly away. It is almost incredible what man may accomplish by system and perseverance; I myself, in my retreat here, of poetry, dramatic writings, and prose, have composed more than fifty volumes for the press.

"To sum up—I have thoroughly satisfied my mind, that fortune consists in happiness, not in wealth; and I honestly avow, that if I have an earthly wish ungratified, it is that, like Gelimer, the dethroned monarch of the Vandals, I may receive my bitterest foe at my gate, and afford him hospitality and assistance, when the heart-cutting blasts of adverse fortune have driven him from the pinnacle of grandeur to the extremity of misery and want."

Captain English having concluded his story, was thanked by his visitors for the pleasure it afforded them.

But the physician, when thanking the ill-used veteran, declared he must have been born under a most chequered configuration of the planets, and he cheered him by the declaration that he had more to rejoice over than deplore in having been made the victim of deceit and injustice; for had this not happened, in all probability he would not have exerted his energies in the manner he had as an author. "In short," added he, "your misfortunes have ennobled you as a man; they have taught you not only much valuable knowledge of the world, but have occasioned you to erect a temple to the goddess of fame; one which may prove more lasting than the honours bestowed by royalty on your illiberal enemies.

"Yes," said the physician, resuming the discourse after a pause, "fortunately for mankind, the pen effects more than the sword. It sometimes unsheaths that weapon, and directs it to a righteous cause, conveying an energy almost supernatural to the heart that uses it. It unveils those mysteries of church and state, which sear and blast all hope and happiness; it inspires nations with the enthusiasm requisite for conquering priestcraft and crushing tyrants; and it establishes freedom and her spontaneous blessings without robbery, or the shedding of human blood."

The persecuted officer now said, that although his friends had been pleased to overrate his poor talents when foreseeing for him a niche in the proud temple of fame; yet his writings, if they were of no other utility, unquestionably had proved valuable to himself, they having made his time fleet happily away, fortified

his mind in the principles of sound philosophy, and for a companion in life given him *content*.

Truth is omnipotent. His guests were thoroughly satisfied of the injustice with which Captain English had been treated; but we forbore making further remarks, as we felt that the less he was reminded of his wrongs, the better it would be for his peace of mind. However, after our taking leave of the ancient soldier at his domicile, we could not avoid, while we walked on our way home, expressing our feelings of regret to each other, that public characters, high in office under a government, should be permitted to hermetically seal the door of inquiry into the conduct of minor servants of the same public they themselves serve, who openly and ardently claim redress at their hands for wrongs inflicted on them by the iron hand of power.

CHAPTER XXVII.

" He folded the fair maid to his breast,
' Thou art my lady-love," said he,
' And I never loved another but thee.' "

" Oh, Pleasure! you're indeed a pleasant thing,
Although one must be damn'd for you, no doubt;
I make a resolution every spring
Of reformation, ere the year run out,
But, somehow, this my vestal vow takes wing.
Oh, Love! thou art the very god of evil,
For, after all, we cannot call thee devil."

" And what has wrought this woful change?
Fiends wrought it —Av'rice, Hate, Revenge!"

THE affectation of sanctity is a blotch on sanctity itself. My landlady was a Roman Catholic, but being thought a rigid one, was allowed to read the Bible; with this proviso, however, that she was to admit no doubt in her mind of the consistency and morality of all things asserted therein; and she availed herself of the privilege in a way which made me think her an arrant impostor. The devout dame never set down, except at meals, without having the sacred volume displayed open on her table, usually with her spectacles extended upon it, and she would descant on the great truths contained therein with enthusiasm.

The ghostly confessor of this sanctified lady was a corpulent divine; fond of high living, and so great an admirer of the fair, that it would have been a satisfactory circumstance for some of

his fellow-men, if the Jewish economy, which *was* to last for ever, had at this time existed: as by it, celibacy was deemed infamous, and the priests were expressly commanded to marry, that the tribe of Levi might not fail.

Idleness is the parent of evil. Having little to employ me, my attention was attracted towards a beautiful brunette, about seventeen years of age, who came almost daily to pass away an hour or two with my landlady, who I was given to understand was her aunt.

To gain the old lady's favour now became necessary, and I accomplished that object by making her presents of *liqueurs* and little delicacies, as also flattering her in no measured strain: thanks to which generalship, my hostess was thrown off her guard, and I had the felicity of having some private conversation with the fair niece, who, in the simplicity of her heart, told me some odd things of their father confessor, by which I augured that he entertained improper designs on the young lady.

Rosa Matilda, the fair girl in question, was innocence personified; and, as I loved to indulge myself in a *tete-à-tete* conversation with her, and sought every possible opportunity of gratifying this wish, there is no calculating what might have been the result of my growing passion, had it not so happened that a very remarkable character, a gentleman who had been one of our gaming fraternity at Genoa, at this critical period came to lodge at our house, and speedily gained the maiden's affections. This much-celebrated personage was an Englishman; but his name, from regard to the feelings of his home connexions, I decline mentioning, and shall content myself by denominating him the Bigamist, a title to which no one can justly dispute his right, inasmuch as he had taken French leave of five or six loving ladies, all of them resident in England, and united to him by the tie of wedlock. Some truths are startling, and those of our Bigamist's many marriages not a little so; but, when we examine into the history of other persons, we shall not deem him one of the *superlative* characters in immorality. Par example, Bayle, the philosopher, emigrated from his native land for the love of a *married* woman; and her husband, though a gentleman renowned for his discoveries in the Apocalypse, was very tardy in seeing what passed in his house between the philosopher and his own wife; but, when he made the notable discovery, instead of using his influence, as he had promised, to get Bayle another professorship, he denounced him as impious, and procured his expulsion from those of philosophy and history, which had been instituted expressly for him. Unlike Bayle, our Bigamist interfered with no man's connubial bliss, but he was an advocate for having a plurality of wives, and often would he say, that his love, like the candle of Amiens, was always burning. Compared, too, with the famed Marshal de Bassompiere, who, when he was shut up in the Bastile of France, occasioned his enemies the trouble of examining seven thousand

of his love letters, mostly from married women, our Bigamist decidedly was a moral man.

The most sagacious are sometimes imposed upon, and it o happened that Father Le Querque suspected me of being the favourite swain of fair Rosa, and never dreamt of the victorious Bigamist having won her affections; consequently, he always looked upon me with the jaundiced eye of suspicion, and bore me much secret hatred. The lodgers used occasionally to take coffee with our landlady, when the priest was always present, and sometimes very aggravating arguments were fomented, which tended to increase the reverend gentleman's acrimony. One evening, in particular, when we were all assembled in the *Salle à manger*, I recollect the following conversation as having taken place:—

"Senor Winpenny," said the staid matron, "will have the complaisance to allow me to hear the remainder of what you, reverend father, may have to edify me by saying on the subject of that wicked race, the Jews."—"Madam," replied the priest, "the Jews, according to the best historians, were guilty of the grossest cruelties in Egypt, in Africa, and in Cyprus, when they revolted against the Emperors Adrian and Trajan." "The Jews," said Mynheer Von Drick, interrupting the propounder of the sacred volume, "the Jews, to whom you stand indebted for your religion, which changes about like a weathercock, and, comparatively speaking, is only of yesterday—the Jews, bad as you make them out to be, are far more excusable for what they did, than the Roman Catholics for the execrable deeds wantonly performed by them in America, and elsewhere; for the Jews were a conquered people, tributary to the Romans, but the Catholics held sway where they tyrannized; and, moreover, were they not conquerors of immense possessions in America, who revelled in abundance of all esteemed things, with great nations lying prostrate before them?" "Young man," now exclaimed the malignant father, unable to contain himself longer, on perceiving me to smile, "it behoveth you to remember, that your days may be few in this land of trial, and that hereafter your punishment may be lasting. Leaving you, however, to reflect on these things, and charitably hoping that both you and your more aged adviser there, may, by repentance and prayer, purge yourselves of all blasphemies and heresies, I now challenge Senor Von Drick to prove his calumnious charges against the Roman Catholics for their conduct to the heathens of America." "Reverend father," rejoined the physician, "the Jesuits say crime cannot be greater than the conscience makes it; therefore, make your mind easy, for mine sits lightly upon me: but, to answer your challenge, the Spaniards, who were called *good Catholics*, landed upon the coasts of two great civilized nations, who had began to enjoy the sweets of peace, when they massacred twelve millions of their people, and hunted men with dogs; moreover, Ferdinand, Kng

of Castile, assigned pensions to the dogs who tore their flesh, for their good services.

The heroic conquerors of the New World, who massacred an unarmed, naked, and harmless people, had haunches of men and women, buttocks, arms, and calves of the legs, in ragouts, served up at their tables. They roasted Guatimozin, King of Mexico. They entered Peru, fired with the zealous design of converting King Atabalipa. A priest, called Almagro, son of a priest condemned in Spain for a highway robbery, came with a certain thief, named Pizarro, to signify to his Majesty, by the mouth of another priest, that a third priest, called Alexander the Sixth, a monster in the shape of man, polluted by incests, assassinations, and murders, had given not only Peru, but half of the New World, to the King of Spain, and that Atabalipa should therefore immediately submit, under the pain of incurring the displeasure of the Apostles St. Peter and St. Paul, of whom he had never before heard. And as the king did not understand Latin, any more than the priest who read the bull, he was immediately declared an unbeliever and an heretic. They burned Atabalipa, as they had roasted Guatimozin. They massacred his nation—put the next inca to a cruel death—and all this to rob them of hard yellow earth, which has served for no other end but to depopulate and impoverish Spain; for it has made them neglect the true earth, the provider of all that is good here, and which, when cultivated, employs and subsists mankind.

"Confess now, holy father," added he, with emphasis, "that had that chimerical being, the devil, been inclined to make men after his image, he could not have made them more abominable, or more infernal, than were these conquerors and rulers, lay and clerical, but who, nevertheless, are denominated *good Catholics*."

During this discourse, ungovernable fury was conspicuous in every feature of the priest's face, and his eyes sparkled with the fire of anger; but he was incapable of speaking. For my part, I expected that a visitation of apoplexy would have been made to the reverend gentleman, which might have saved him the trouble of further controversy; but I was deceived, he was made of tougher materials than I had given him credit for.

My hostess, who best knew the character of the evangelical gentleman, laying her hand upon his arm, while his paroxysm of rage was great, calmly observed to him that the Lord Jesus himself reproved Peter for cutting off the man's ear, therefore no disciple of the church ought to give way to violence. "Yes, madam," stammered the furious priest, "I allow that St. Peter was reproved by our Lord, but it was not until after he had taken revenge on the offender. Christ let him use his sword before he replaced it in the scabbard; and thus it is the foes of the church should be dealt with by the priesthood."

"Hush, dear learned senor," rejoined the dame, "you know you can excommunicate, and do what you please, to heretics; but

we are all heated. Let us forget this business, and, as a proof of forgiveness, drink together of a generous cordial from my cupboard."

The matron now opened her cupboard, and took from it a small stand of cordial bottles and glasses, together with a plate of biscuits, when we went through the ceremony of drinking "oblivion to past unpleasant feelings;" but, while he drank the toast, malignancy was depicted in the priest's countenance, freed from every particle of Christian humility; and, that revengeful feelings were harboured in his breast, no one who beheld him could doubt.

While things were going on thus at our lodging-house, where numerous were the arguments and altercations we had with the vengeful father, the Bigamist was slyly undermining the affections of fair Rosa, who believed all that he said, and trembled with horror whenever he touched on her confessor's love towards her; consequently, with so smooth a path before him, that experienced character soon persuaded the maiden to take clandestine leave of her parents, who were people in poor circumstances, partly dependant on her worthless aunt, and place herself under his protection.

When a maid blushes consent to her gallant's tender proposition, no time should be lost by him in carrying his plans into execution. The Bigamist was very sensible of this, and accordingly so managed the business, that at an early hour of the morning following the fair one's acquiescence, a post-carriage was in readiness outside of the city gate, with his bag and baggage packed thereon, and shortly after pretty Rosa Matilda, with her little bundle in her hand, came tripping along, to join her anxious gallant, when they stepped into the carriage, and away they went as fast as a pair of good horses could convey them, bound for fair Florence, the garden of Italy.

Our Bigamist decidedly was a great sensualist, and also a most designing character, where cunning could avail in administering to his sensuality, but then almost all his desires centred in love. Even learning he made subservient to the tender passion, and from his not having acquired a thorough knowledge of Italian, I verily believe that his chief motive in stealing pretty Rosa Matilda away was, that she might become his tutoress in the soft Italian language, which an experienced monarch of Spain pronounces the fittest to be taught from the lips of beauty. The Bigamist's cavalier departure was almost instantly known at our house; but as he had taken the precaution of leaving a letter for me, enclosing money to discharge the landlady's account, it created no particularly unfavourable sensation, though the landlady failed not to pronounce his way of departure as a shabby transaction. When, however, the day was more advanced, and the parents of Rosa Matilda had missed their fair daughter, great became the outcry and confusion, until at length it was fully understood in what

manner she had taken her departure, with the Bigamist as the companion of her flight.

The poor girl's parents were now distracted, and my hostess most furious; and, as a thing of course, Father La Querque was immediately sent for to be consulted. I was present when he came, and never can I forget the imprecations he uttered against the Bigamist. Indeed the reverend gentleman entirely lost sight of the precepts of Christianity, and displayed only the feelings of ferocity, swearing most dreadful vengeance. However, to pass from this lamentable instance of the weakness of human nature, displayed in an evangelical preacher, I shall mention, that under his council and direction no time was lost in sending people after the fugitives; but their endeavours proved futile, as they could not overtake them, though they were near doing so at Placentia, having literally entered that city just as the pair of lovers quitted it in an opposite direction. The officers of justice even followed them to the frontier of the duchy; but the wily Bigamist, who knew when and where he might consider his prize of beauty safe in his possession, never came to a halt until he had passed this barrier, and thereby triumphantly achieved his object, laughing, no doubt, with the fair one, at the disappointment and rage of the ghostly father.

Happy love is a great dulcifier of life, and to judge by what their pursuers heard, Apollo himself could not have been more enchanted with the fair daughter of Admetus, than was the Bigamist with the beautiful girl, who had chosen him for her protector. They journeyed together delighted with all they saw, and no doubt the world appeared to them a wide-spreading garden of fruits and flowers, where from storms or thorns they had nothing to apprehend. Variety, too, which is coveted in all ages of life, is doubly pleasing to youth, and therefore to Rosa Matilda, a lass in her teens, and our Bigamist, who was yet a young man, the journey could not be otherwise than a delightful one; indeed, the Bigamist was always of the philosopher Martin's opinion, that this world abounds with good things, and he is a mere dolt who neglects to enjoy all that he can of them.

But leaving the happy pair to journey on mutually enraptured with each other, and find fresh delights awaiting them at every new stage, it behoves me to mention, that the holy confessor, and his friend my hostess, after ascertaining there was no chance of their recovering the fugitive maiden, or obtaining satisfaction of the man who had stole her away, turned all their vengeance against me, and secretly confederated together on the best method of visiting me with condign punishment, and, if possible, enriching themselves at my expense.

One evening, as I was on my return home alone from a private concert, much to my consternation, I was arrested in the public street on a charge of treason against the state, and instantly hurried away to prison, without having an opportunity of seeing or

sending for my secretary, or any other person. On our arrival at the gaol, I was delivered into the custody of a ferocious fellow, its governor, who had no sooner given a receipt for my body, than he conducted me to a strong airy cell, situated at the upper part of the building. The cell was lit by a small window, next the street, which no captive could well hope to escape by, as it was secured by a strong iron grating, which passed the whole length over the window.

I put several questions to the gaoler, but the surly fellow would give no direct answer to my inquiries, but locked me up, and departed as expeditiously as he could, leaving me to my own meditations, which were not the pleasantest; indeed, the more I reflected on the subject of my being apprehended on a charge of treason, the more was I bewildered at the unaccountable strangeness of the event. The gaoler, however, had left me no light, and wearied with forming vain conjectures, I soon stretched myself on the bedstead, and after an hour or two spent in painful contemplation fell fast asleep.

I awoke not until one of the gaolors entered my cell next morning, bearing my allowance of food. Scarcely had he set down the ration, before he glanced his eyes around the cell; looked under the wooden stretcher; and next mounted on the stool, to satisfy himself that all was right at the grated window; when, muttering something in a low voice, he commenced examining the bolts and lock; which done, he departed, bolting and doubly locking the door.

If I am to augur from this fellow's conduct, thought I, he must have received strict injunctions regarding me; and, certainly, the charge of treason, on which I have been apprehended, justifies the adoption of strong precautionary measures to secure my person. However, knowing myself to be innocent of any offence committed or premeditated against the government of this duchy, it follows that my captivity has been occasioned by the agency of some vindictive enemy or enemies; but who, I am at a loss to conjecture. When the gaolor next visits me, I will ask him for pen, ink, and paper, that I may invite friends to see me, by their means to find out the cause of my imprisonment.

In many cases, it is easier to form resolutions than put them into execution. The gaolor, who probably was desirous of leaving me ample time for contemplation, made no second visit that day, therefore writing letters or dispatching messages were acts not to be performed.

"Confound the fellow," muttered I, after some hours had elapsed, and I had well pondered over the circumstance of my captivity. "Confound him, why doesn't he come to see what may be wanted here? Does the rascal suppose a prisoner feels no wants? However," added I, raising my voice, "it is high time to prepare and send off letters, so that prompt measures may be taken by my friends to get me released from this disgusting

place, when I hope to obtain full and honourable satisfaction for the indignity and wrongs heaped upon me."

Having thus terminated my soliloquy, I instantly, by thundering at the door and calling aloud, commenced my endeavours at obtaining what was necessary for the accomplishment of my wishes; but all my noise availed not, although it was made loud enough to disturb an entire street, and was reiterated for better than half an hour, the jailor not choosing to make his appearance, nor allow any of his turnkeys to answer the summons made upon them.

"Pretty treatment this," muttered I, seating myself upon the bed, tired by the futile efforts I had made. "This is conduct to provoke a saint; but I must not forget, that he who would triumph over difficulties, must keep himself cool and collected;" then, after humming a tune for a few seconds, I remarked, taking up my allowance of food, that the adage, of hunger being the best sauce, came very home to me; when, without more words, I set to and demolished the day's ration.

I had ample time afforded me for the display of my patience; for, after I had devoured my ration of food, day gradually waned away, until the shades of night darkened my cell, yet no gaolor made his appearance.

I now wrapped the coverlid of the bed around me, and extended my limbs once more on the wooden stretcher, to take my nightly repose; but although I possessed one of the happiest of constitutions, and that my body was habituated to hardships, it would be asserting an untruth to affirm that I enjoyed my ordinary night's sleep: in fact, my mind, in spite of philosophy, continued feverishly active for hours after I had laid myself down, and I obtained no sleep. Powerful nature, however, afterwards asserted her prerogative, and I slept soundly until awakened on the following morning by the unbarring of my cell door.

The uncouth savage of a turnkey, who had come to pay his morning visit, said nothing upon entering, but looked about the cell to satisfy himself that all was as it should be, when he was on the eve of taking his departure; but I, who had hitherto eyed the fellow with silent contempt, mentioned to him my want of writing materials.

He condescended not to reply, but after regarding me in a supercilious way, turned himself towards the door, the lock of which was already under his hand, that he might depart; when, overcome by feelings of anger, I suddenly sprung from off the bedstead and caught the fellow by the neck, when, by the violence of my grasp, I forced him to let go the lock, and raise both his hands, with the design of saving himself from strangulation. "Wretch," now said I, casting the man upon his back on the bedstead, "let this lesson teach you how to behave to a prisoner another time, and deem yourself fortunate in being so leniently

treated: some men, in my situation, with their feelings excited by your brutality, would dash your brains out against the stone wall." "Mercy," ejaculated the terrified ruffian, raising himself upon his breech on the bed, and staring with awe and wonder, "if I have offended, I ask pardon; but pray, senor, whatever you do, let me go away; for if you detain me here, I shall lose my place, and be a ruined man."

Fear enacts wonders. The advantage I had gained over him had completely tamed the turnkey, and I availed myself of this circumstance to propose terms, which otherwise he would not have listened to; but, as a bribe was the basis of my conditions, he was brought to consent to them. Accordingly, that same day, writing materials were brought to me, and I wrote and despatched away an epistle to my secretary, as also one to Mynheer Von Drick, which the now accommodating turnkey undertook should be delivered into their hands.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

"Well I know how treachery works;
Still near his prey the tiger lurks;
Conspiracy, still dark and deep,
Silent on bloody claws doth creep."

"With languor to his mat he crept,
And, whatsoe'er his visions, quickly slept."

"Let's not be dainty of leave-taking,
But shift away; there's warrant in that theft
Which steals itself when there's no mercy left."

The brutal ferocity with which men destroy each other in open warfare, serves to impress the mind with a disadvantageous idea of human kind; but the insidious arts practised in private life to overreach, ruin, and bring misery, want, and disgrace upon others, inspire us with still more bitter, more melancholy, reflections. In times of peace, innate depravity is the main source of wicked actions; but when war takes place, the animosity of individuals being freed by designing legislators from the restraints imposed by civil laws, affords them a pretence for the display of demoniac passions.

The contemplation of truths like the foregoing, degrading to our species, cannot be otherwise than painful to the mind; consequently, I felt highly pleased, when at length I was interrupted in a chain of such unpleasant thoughts by the unbarring of my cell door. The gaolor had come to give entrance to a friend of mine, and this was Mynheer Von Drick. He expressed joy at seeing me, and said that he had lost no time in coming to the

prison after the receipt of my note; but that the captain, for this was the title he usually gave Monday, was out when he left their lodging, and public report had bruited it abroad that very treasonable papers had been discovered in my trunk. "It is inexplicable; the whole business is inexplicable," was my reply; "the charge is ungrounded; I am innocent of any offence against the government." "The captain," resumed the physician, "is indefatigable in your behalf. He has allowed himself no rest since your apprehension, but has already been with several great personages of the duchy, who, however, decline interesting themselves in the cause of one charged with the crime of high treason. But these men," added he indignantly, "are the children of prosperity: believe me, on a levee day, at this paltry court here, I could point you out scores of these reptiles." "You are a plain, straightforward, honest man, friend Von Drick," said I, smiling; "but honesty and truth have long been out of fashion at court, therefore you have no business to go playing the spy there." "I go there, indeed!" rejoined the indignant Hollander; "it would be an insult to suspect me. No; give me a last and a cobbler's awl—let me mend shoes, rather than be that viper—a courtier. The cobbler's is an honest trade, and the cobbler may be an independent man, in his humble way; but the courtier's trade is a dishonest one from beginning to end. The sycophant reaps what he never sowed. His idleness must be upheld by the industrious part of the community."

Here the worthy gentleman's philippic was put an end to by the appearance of my secretary, who, on entering the cell, expressed his joy in unqualified terms at having found out my place of anchorage; though, he added, he was sorry to see it was in shallow water, among the land sharks. He now acquainted me with all the vain efforts he had made to trace me out, and concluded by declaring his opinion, that the intention of my persecutors had been to keep the place of my imprisonment a profound secret. "But captain," asked my Dutch friend, "have you made no discovery concerning the treasonable papers alledged to have been found in Monsieur Winpenny's baggage? For my part, I am most anxious to learn who is the author of this mischief: indeed, I would bet two to one that some Jezebel of a woman is at the bottom of the affair." "Avast heaving there, commodore," rejoined the sailor, laughingly. "Who ever heard tell of the bottom part of a ship's cargo being discharged before a clear way was made for hoisting it out of her hold: however, after all is said, you sail with a fair breeze on this tack, for a brimstone hatched the conspiracy; but then, d'ye see, a Jesuit put his hand to the helm, to carry her through with the management." "A brimstone and a Jesuit may sail in the same boat without fear of their honesty overloading her: they are suitable mates for each other, no matter whether in a convent or a conventicle," was my Dutch friend's observation.

My secretary now informed me, that having suspected my valet as a party implicated in causing my misfortune, he had locked himself in a chamber with him, and closely questioned the fellow, who, however, stoutly denied every thing, until, eventually, he clapped the muzzle of a pistol to his head, and threatened him with instant death, unless he atoned for his ingratitude by making a full confession, as to his own conduct and all he knew of the plans of his employers; but, provided he did this, had promised him not only pardon, but a handsome pecuniary reward; when, fear and hope operating together upon him, the man, who was a Roman Catholic, avowed that Father La Querque had persuaded him that his master was a confirmed heretic, unworthy of being suffered to be at large, and that as there could be no virtue without the true faith, his best deeds were no more than shining sins: after which, he had promised him full absolution for all his crimes, however black or numerous, on condition that he put certain papers, which would be given to him for the purpose, into his master's trunk, and acted, in other respects, according to instructions he would receive. The valet was thus induced to become a party in the confederation against me, and from what he had further stated to my secretary, it appeared that not only our hostess was concerned, but that a married lady of title, and expensive habits, who occasionally visited her house, had, under the hope of sharing in my property, been brought over to fabricate a fresh charge against me, of a violent attempt upon her chastity, which the priest and our hostess would be ready, by false evidence, to help to substantiate, so that, should the charge of treason fall to the ground, I might be convicted of this last crime.

Monday's statement caused me much surprise. I could scarcely credit the circumstance, that a female of title could stoop to act so black a part, and I remained for some time wrapped in silent meditation on the subject. The Dutchman, who had become disgusted at the relaxation of morals witnessed by him, among high classes of the Italian ladies, was the first to break silence, which he did by declaiming against women, and aristocratic honours entailed on their issue. "Did I not prophecy," said the now animated old gentleman, holding up both his hands in the manner of a genuine orator— "say, for I appeal to you both, did I not prophecy, that a woman was at the bottom of all this mischief? Verily, verily, it could not have been otherwise, for women are the root of all evil. The genealogist is an impostor, as no man can be sure of his wife's virtue: neither can any man say, with certainty, 'that is my father.' Let me then ask, why are fools proud of their ancestry? of that of which they are ignorant! Aristocratic rank should descend only in the female line; for, on that of the male, there may not remain one *gout* of noble blood. Truly fortunate was it for Louis the Fourteenth that *his* happened to be a *white* face; as, had it not, like the negress, his sister, he must have spent his days in a convent; and this, forsooth, as the courtiers would have said, because his

virtuous mother, in her freakish moments, had looked too intently on her glossy African dwarf."

I could not refrain from smiling at the vehemence of my learned friend, in delivering his philippic against the fairest work of the creation; but my secretary heeded him not, for he was too deeply absorbed in reflecting upon what might be the most advisable way to employ himself to get me promptly liberated from prison, to allow of his attention being diverted to another channel.

After some further conversation, it was agreed upon by the trio of us that my friends should bring an able lawyer on the following day, that we might consult with him on what was to be done, when they from necessity departed, leaving me to another night's solitary imprisonment. Next morning, however, they came punctual to their time, with a legal gentleman as their companion, who had already sifted, as far as was practicable, into my affair.

This gentleman, being a thorough lawyer, had discovered there would be no possibility of rebutting the evidence against me, and that for the most potent of reasons; namely, because the said evidence was entirely founded on falsehood, and therefore could be enlarged and strengthened to any point requisite for ensuring the prisoner's conviction; a sort of evidence which Parma lawyers, in the cant of their profession, style the *invincible*.

"The countess, Senor Winpenny," said this enlightened counsellor, "has positively sworn that you made a forcible attempt on her chastity, and, moreover, that you have communicated to her a plan you have formed for subverting the government of this duchy; while, unfortunately, the Jesuit priest, La Querque, circumstantially confirms her testimony, by deposing that she communicated these things to him at the confessional, and he admits that it was by his advice your crime of treason was made known to the proper authorities, by whose order your baggage was seized, and your person taken into custody. Unfortunately, too, full and corroborating proofs of your guilt have been found deposited in a trunk of yours. Indeed, senor," added the counseller, with peculiar emphasis, "it appears the clearest law case I ever gave professional advice on; you have not a loop-hole to escape by."

"Heaven preserve us," exclaimed Mynheer Von Drick; "yes, Heaven preserve us from the machinations of such a terrible woman; she is more to be dreaded than plague and pestilence." "And Heaven preserve us from the disciples of old Dominick," observed my secretary. "The symbol on their flag is a mad dog, bearing a lit torch in its mouth. They are all precious rascals; and, as Mynheer properly says, a Jesuit and a brimstone may sail in the same craft without fear of their honesty sinking her." "In most cases of common law," resumed the counsellor, disregarding the observations just made, "alibi's and false swearing may be resorted to with success, to mislead a judge and confound a jury: then, again, provided it was a case of debt, sworn unjustly against you, we could ensure a nonsuit, by bringing witnesses to prove pay-

ment of the amount, though you had never owed it, or had a transaction with the perjured claimant. In a Chancery suit, where affidavits are received as sterling testimony, the wealthiest man bringing most of these documents, no matter how false they are, may almost to a certainty ensure to himself the estate of any poor wretch, especially when he has previously got possession; though sometimes it will happen, that he has to throw his untold folios of affidavits overboard, and resort to common law for his verdict. But, Senor Winpenny," concluded the learned man, sorrowfully shaking his head, "this case of yours seems altogether hopeless and desperate."

"Your opinion is extremely unfavourable," replied I, "yet, learned senor, I must request you will once more consider over this business: surely there must be some way by which an innocent man's conduct may be justified from false charges made against him."

"Innocence has no claims upon the law—eviidence is all *we* lawyers look to," replied he, with profound gravity. "If, indeed, these damning papers had not been found among your baggage, something perhaps might be done to rebut the charge of treason. Then, again, was the countess a poor woman, we could procure certificates of her insanity, as also of that of her colleague, the father confessor, for medical gentlemen run no risk on such occasions, as it is an established truth in law that *nemo mortalium omnibus horis sapit.*"

"Many," resumed my legal adviser, after a few minutes of reflection, "yea, hundreds of our fellow-creatures, who are no more deranged in their intellects than I am, are annually incarcerated within the walls of madhouses, by means of this expedient; but, then, the lady in question being wealthy, it follows that there would be a commission established in her case, and from what information I have gathered, her husband is not as yet sufficiently tired of her to join with us in our plan, consequently we should be defeated. Indeed, I must once more repeat, this is a bad cause; a cause in which every art can be practised against us to impose upon judgment, and to defeat the ends of justice: we have every thing to fear, and little or nothing to hope. In short, the cause is so very bad, that I apprehend I must throw up my brief."

The learned lawyer, though he was burdened with rather too great a share of honesty for a Parma advocate, yet prudently took further time to determine whether or not he would throw up his brief; and during this interval of suspense, he obtained an interview with my treacherous valet, as also with the still more treacherous father La Querque.

From the former he heard a confirmation of all which that person had confessed to my secretary; while, by his conference with the priest, he satisfied himself that he was to be bought over, but then the bribe must be enormous: considering, therefore, that the Jesuit was too unprincipled to be relied on, even although bribed, at our next meeting, the counsellor again candidly confessed that he

knew not what course to recommend. I thanked the learned gentleman for the zeal he had displayed in my cause, and after making a suitable pecuniary compliment, dismissed him, saying I would take a day or two to consider over the business, when I would make known to him my determination.

Scarcely had the door been closed on the long-robed gentleman, after his last visit, ere my secretary broke forth in invectives against the Jesuits. "For his part," he said, "he didn't believe any young woman could long retain her virtue, nor any man his honesty, who had a Jesuit for their ghostly confessor. In short," added the worthy sailor, "villany and Jesuitism go hand-in-hand together, and so closely, that should Old Nick take a spell upon earth among the Jesuits, no matter whether he assumed the sex of man or that of woman, or came in a black or a white skin, he would inevitably be caught in their traps, and fall a victim to their machinations."

The worthy physician, notwithstanding the prejudice he had imbibed against certain Parma dames of fashion, with the kind hope of softening thereby her evidence and serving me, now departed to pay a visit to the dashing countess, who had thought fit to institute a grievous charge against me, and at the expiration of a couple of hours the good man re-entered my cell, almost breathless with agitation, when some time elapsed before he could compose his ideas sufficiently to make known the grounds of his fear; a fear growing out of his apprehensions from her threats, and the conversation which had passed between them, that the countess, as a punishment for his officious interference in her affair with me, might swear an attempt at rape against himself. Fear has many eyes; yet this conceit of the good gentleman appeared so ridiculous, that I could not forbear smiling when he made the communication, but my secretary laughed aloud for several minutes at the idle apprehension, as he termed Mynheer Von Drick's conceit, and then told him to keep a light heart, and should the worst happen, defend the action, either by establishing an alibi, or pleading corporeal infirmity.

The astronomer bore my secretary's jokes with good humour; nevertheless he shuddered on contemplating the character of the fair countess, and certainly could not have mastered his antipathy sufficiently to have paid the lady another visit in my behalf. After his departure, my secretary, having cautiously closed the door, in a half whisper asked what I purposed doing to get out of that vile gaol; for his part, he said, if I would be guided by him, he'd warrant I'd soon hoist my anchor apeak, and make sail from the foul berth I was in.

"Since you tender your advice so freely, my friend, and that I well know your sincerity, let me hear what you have to propose," said I.

"A crow bar, in your honour's hands, may be made to clear away a part of yon grating, and a sound inch rope might serve to lower you into the street below."

"I understand you," replied I. "Flight you think preferable to captivity, and in this case, where personal honour is not concerned,

I am of your way of thinking; be it therefore your office to provide the articles you have mentioned, and it will be my fault if I don't make a proper use of them."

"Enough, enough has been said; the craft which has many reaches to work through before she floats in good sea room, should, with the turn of the tide commence her voyage down the stream; therefore, your honour, I'll sheer off, without waiting to hoist up Blue Peter."

As he had spoken so he acted. My secretary departed at the termination of his speech; but, before two hours had elapsed, re-entered my cell, when, having closed the door, he extracted several fathoms of rope from under his coat, where it had laid snugly coiled round his body. Moreover, the zealous sailor repeated this feat so often during that and the ensuing day, that the pieces which had been brought by him, when spliced to each other, formed a rope of sufficient length to extend from my cell to the pavement of the street beneath; after which a crow bar, smuggled into the gaol under his trousers, served to fulfil this part of his engagement. It should, however, be remarked, that in all probability the gallant sailor would not have been able to accomplish this task, had it not been that the gaolers were grown less vigilant in their care of me, than was usual for them to be with prisoners; but whether this relaxation had been caused by the free circulation of my money amongst them, would be ungenerous, and perhaps imprudent, to promulgate. Whatever it arose from, the negligence was favourable to my views, insomuch as it enabled me to get the crow bar and coil of rope, and to keep these things apparently undiscovered beneath my bed.

Two o'clock of the morning, after our arrangements were completed, was the time fixed upon for attempting my escape, and punctual to the minute, my secretary was at the appointed spot, where I soon had the satisfaction of joining him; but extremely to his surprise, instead of descending by the rope from my cell window, as he calculated on my doing, I made my exit from the prison, by the identical door through which I had been conducted into this place of incarceration.

"Your honour," said the astonished sailor, while we were jogging fast along the street, "your honour must have come the old soldier over the rogue of a gaoler, for apparently you have made no use of the rope which I smuggled into the prison."

"Gold has mollified a pair of hard hearts and opened a strongly barred door," replied I. "The rope and the crow bar, however, are not without their use. The gaolers will make it appear to the world that I escaped by these means; and although the artful fellows knew these things were under my bedding, and notwithstanding that the turnkey himself saw me pass safely out of the prison, yet by masking their treachery, they, like some villains of a high grade in society, who effectually cloke and mask their iniquitous deeds, will continue to retain their situations.

CHAPTER XXIX.

" Much my tale would swell,
Might I the war-horse virtues tell;
Yet trace him through but one day's chance,
A whirlwind in the first advance—
A fury in the battle's heat—
A guardian angel in retreat,—
Who bears the loser from the fray,
And saves him for a luckier day;
By whose good help, when fortune's down,
Full many a king hath saved his crown."

" Enough, good Hylas, we each other know,
A truce to compliment, 'tis friendship's foe."

" THE horses are standing ready rigged just without the city gates, and the passport is snug in my pocket," said the sailor, soon as we had passed a street or two; " so, your honour, let us bear ahand and push ahead while the breeze favours, and the enemy has no frigates abroad."

" Show the way, Monday, with the best speed you can," was my laconic reply.

It was a dark morning, and a drizzling rain fell; but these were circumstances favourable to a fugitive. We passed through the town without meeting more than two or three straggling persons; when, by virtue of Monday's passport, which he had procured in the names of two of his acquaintances, resembling us in age and size, we found no difficulty in satisfying the guard, and getting egress at the city gates. Having now proceeded a short distance, we came to a cabaret, in the stable of which, thanks to the sailor's arrangement, three post-horses were standing ready bridled and saddled.

My secretary directed the attendant courier to bring out his horses, and the landlord, who seemed half asleep, his dram bottle, when recommending me to take a *gout* of *eau-de-vie* and a mouthful of bread and Parmesian cheese, to fortify my stomach against the damp of the morning air, he himself, contrary to the custom of medical advisers, enforced his own recommendation by taking a double dose of the liquid prescribed for another.

" Foul weather befal the rascally old Jesuit, and the letter-out of this overgrown garran besides," say I. " Would that his reverence the priest was here, riding between us, mounted on this restive jade,

and that I was aloft on a smoother goer; that's all I've to say," observed Monday, after his horse had started off, kicking and plunging at every step.

"Riding, I perceive, is not your fort, and you are mounted on a vicious animal; therefore, let us change horses," said I.

"Never fear me, sir; I'll keep my seat, I warrant," replied the sailor, whose maritime pride forbade of his dismounting.

"Pride!" says one of our adages, "generally meets with a fall." Before we had proceeded far, the sailor was thrown headlong from his horse, and thereby punished for his *obstinacy*, which is the name for persevering courage when misapplied. Fortunately, as it prevented him from being maimed, his head pitched on the thickest part of a mud heap scraped on one side of the road; but, jumping up as soon as he could extricate himself from his uninviting bed, he bawled in a loud voice that he was overboard, but trusted I would take either his or the postillion's horse in tow.

The advice was not thrown away. Finding the loose charger had galloped to the rear, and that our attendant was on the eve of following after him, I promptly stopped the fellow from executing the retrograde movement, by seizing hold of his horse's bridle; when Monday, notwithstanding his woful plight, stepped to the opposite side of the steed, and in coarse terms ordered the rider to dismount and go on foot after his beast; for he and his friend, he said, should employ their time better than in searching after vicious runaway horses.

The man, evidently dissatisfied at the order, commenced starting objections to complying with it; on which the sailor, unwilling to waste time in useless discussion, caught hold of him round the waist, and lifted him from his horse, when he himself mounted the animal, and saying that the pair of hacks and money for their hire should be left with the postmaster at the next stage, he put spurs to his charger and galloped away, leaving our late attendant, thanks to the fraternal embrace he had received, in nearly as muddy a condition as himself.

We now proceeded on our way at a brisk rate; till, after a time, checking my pace, I jocularly said, "the Jew, when he takes in his neighbour with a bad article, declares that a fair exchange is no robbery; and you, my friend, by your late bargain, show yourself to be much of the Jew's way of thinking."

"Why, sir, to own the truth, the capsize I have had has taught me that he who rides post on a bad horse, when his postillion is aloft upon a good goer, is but a ninny for his pains."

"You are a gainer more ways than one by this exchange," observed I; "but, joking apart, 'tis well you were not hurt by the fall."

"A sound hull, your honour, receives no injury by running foul of a mud bank; yet I'm in a pretty pickle I must own, and the sooner I get scrubbed down the better," rejoined he, looking at his own dirty condition.

We put to proof the good bottom of our horses; for, aided only by several short delays at cabarets on our route, to bait the generous animals, we managed to reach a large posting village on the road to Placentia, to which, after our cavalier treatment of the postillion, we deemed it advisable to proceed, instead of going in an opposite direction, under pretence of which we had hired the post-horses.

"*Ah, mon dieu,*" exclaimed the ostler, who was a Frenchman, when he received charge of our cattle at the inn door here, "these horses belong to old Deranzy, of the Pewter Pot, in the faubourg of Parma old city."

"You think yourself a shrewd fellow, no doubt," said the sailor; "nevertheless, my lad, you may be wrong for once in your life."

"Ha, ha, ha," laughed aloud the ostler, "wrong for once in my life, did you say? Yes, senors, mayhap I may, for who can be always right? Howsoever, by Saint Benedict, I am not in the wrong box this time. Here, too, are my evidences, and they shall bear me through the truth of my story. This, gentlemen," added he, patting one of the horses, "this is Whistling Meg, as good a goer as any mare that travels the road; but then she has got a string halt, and is a little thick in the wind or so. Then, again, here's Old Boreas, as noisy and hard trotting a gelding as rider ever crossed; but I'll tell you what, senors, you were in luck's way not to have had the old trooping horse hired out to you, for if you had, depend on it you would not have forgotten him in a hurry."

"Why," inquired the sailor, "what is there remarkable in the animal you allude to?"

"Why, master, to let you into a bit of a secret, you must know, it is not long since I lived ostler at the Pewter Pot, and the old trooper there, I can assure you, is a rum one. How Deranzy managed to train him, I am sure I don't know, though this is certain, he keeps him to let out to strangers; and as soon as the old devil gets some little distance on the road, he kicks off his rider and gallops home to his stable, where a feed of corn, he knows, is in the manger ready for him.

"Deranzy, who on these occasions stays on the watch for him, now sends the trooper away to work at a farm he has, some miles from the Pewter Pot, and pretending the horse is lost, he frightens his unfortunate customer by threats of a law-suit to recover its value, until at last the poor fellow is glad to compromise the business, by paying money to advertise the lost animal, and make up for a week or two of his hire."

"If what you say be correct, this Deranzy must be a precious rascal," observed the sailor, rather angrily.

"'Tis as true as that I stand here," rejoined the ostler; "howsoever, provided your honour misgives my word, you have but to ask among the sailor chaps of Genoa, who sometimes travel this way, whether or not they've heard talk of Deranzy's trooping horse, and I'll take on me to warrant you'll hear enough about him."

"Why would you have me inquire among the sailors, more than of any other class of people?" asked Monday, somewhat pettishly.

"Lord bless your honour," replied the grinning ostler, "anybody may take in a sailor; a sailor scarcely knows a horse from a cow—you may believe it or not, as you please; but, on my oath, a Dutch skipper bought a mule of my old master for the purpose of keeping her to breed; and another spoony of a skipper took a great fancy to an aged nag, almost past his work, because he had very long grinders, which this sailor captain said would give him a good start at an inn stable, by enabling him to eat two allowances of hay and corn to another horse's one. Pincher was the name of this horse, and it was lucky he hadn't been *bishoped*, that master might palm him off for a young 'un, as he got more money for him than he would have got for a six-year old gelding.

"These were lubberly bargemen, and not sailors, who were taken-in in this foolish manner," said Monday, evidently annoyed by the conversation.

"Ha, ha, ha," again laughed the ostler, disregarding the last observation, and then adding, "Deranzy has gathered lots of shiners from the sailors; the old trooper is kept on purpose to accommodate such flats; and they have paid him her value twenty times over."

"Come, my friend," said I, smiling, and drawing Monday aside, "the ostler pushes you too hard: you will do well to call to mind the words of your own inimitable bard,

> "Let the stricken deer go weep,
> The hart ungalled play;"

for, rest assured, when we have the free choice left us, no matter whether we may be stricken in mind or body, the wisest course is to play like the hart, and not suffer affliction like the wounded deer."

"Would that I had the lubber aboard a-ship. I'd soon teach him the difference between a sailor and an ostler fellow," muttered Monday, walking away from his unintentional insulter.

From feeling apprehensive that news of my flight would speedily be spread throughout the duchy, and considering the circumstance of the horses my secretary and I had journeyed on being well known here, I deemed it prudent immediately to decamp, and resume our journey, in such a way as would attract the least notice, and leave reason for the people of our hôtel to imagine we were still in the village.

Accordingly, after having given directions that the horses should be taken good care of during the time of our absence, we quitted the hotel, and on foot proceeded on our journey towards the frontiers of the empress-queen's rule. It was our intention to get into the first diligence that might overtake us; and after we had marched at a brisk pace for several hours, that of Placentia came up, but, to our disappointment, had its full complement of passengers. Presently afterwards, a courier, who also overtook us, stopped his horse

to mention, that when he left Parma, search was making there after a runaway traitor, and provided that either of us should be the man, he said he would advise him to get out of sight of people on the high road.

The well-meaning courier was no sooner lost to our view, than we profited by his good advice, and taking a distant hill on the road for our guide, directed our course for it; but walking over a pathless country, where hedges, ditches, trees, and newly-ploughed land obstruct the way, admits of little comparison in the fatigue it causes, to journeying on foot upon a smooth road; and of this we were soon made sensible. Besides, sailors are not remarkable for being good pedestrians; and Monday, for example, had not exercised his legs more than two hours in walking over the broken soil, before he declared that he could get on no longer, but must come to an anchor, to take a short spell of rest.

"Yonder is a shepherd, tending his sheep; we will seat ourselves beside him," was my smiling reply. "Willingly, willingly, sir," rejoined the sailor, and the pair of us trod our way over the greensward, to the bank upon which the shepherd was seated.

The four-footed guardian of the sheep boldly confronted us, to oppose our further progress towards his master's seat; and, with the hair of his back bristled up, and his long white teeth rendered furious by his snarl, looked no contemptible opponent; but his master's word and whistle in an instant tamed this faithful slave, who, obedient to his duty, at the shepherd's order turned to his daily occupation of lording it over the fleecy flock, and left us to pursue our path in quiet.

The shepherd was a silver-headed, lame old man, yet he cheerfully rose from his seat to salute us, and shortly afterwards the whole three were comfortably seated beside each other, under a shady tree, on the verdant bank.

The complimentary expletives resorted to, to mask truth in more fashionable life, were not called for at this meeting; but, pleased at the unsophisticated manners of the shepherd, after some little conversation had passed touching his fleecy charge, I thus addressed him:—

"Your days, my friend, must be passed away rationally. The struggles of men after the gewgaws of life disturb you not; but Nature, in all her luxuriant simplicity, constantly gratifies your sight."

"You say true, worthy sir," replied the shepherd, "I have grown old amongst my sheep; and, God be praised, am well satisfied with my lot."

"'Tis an enviable one to a man who can divest himself of ambition, which few in the busy world know how to do," observed I.

"Ha, this is what Strephon has taught me," said the shepherd. "Till Strephon came home from the wars, I was not so content. He it was taught every one in our village to be satisfied with his lot: but mayhap, sir," added he, looking earnestly in my face, "you

have read or heard talk of Strephon and Hylas, for we have been sung together, in a book called the Belgic Pastorals."

"Ha, worthy shepherd; is it you then, is it Hylas that I see?" said Monday, extending his hand to take that of the old shepherd. "I have read the Pastorals of which thou speakest; but so far was I from ever expecting to meet Hylas, that really, until now, I entertained doubts whether Strephon and Hylas were real characters."

"Real to be sure," exclaimed he, with emphasis; "but the night is drawing in, and I am going home with my flock; therefore, if you are not better engaged, prithee, kind gentlemen, satisfy yourselves we are so, by accompanying me to Strephon's abode, where, depend upon it, you will be welcomed as worthy guests ought to be."

"We accept of your invitation with joy," answered I, "and, believe me to be sincere, kind shepherd, when I say, I would rather be the companion of Strephon and Hylas this night, to witness their happy friendship, than the guest of a monarch."

The lame shepherd now arose from his seat to collect together his flock, when I, who had never perused the Belgic Pastorals, and consequently knew nothing of the story of Strephon and Hylas, availed myself of this opportunity for satisfying my curiosity, by questioning Monday on the subject.

Hylas rejoined us, holding the bridle of a pony, which he had caught up from grazing among his sheep; and observed, that lameness, added to a touch of the infirmities of age, he trusted would sufficiently plead his excuse for riding home, when accompanied by foot companions, far his betters in every respect.

The party of us proceeded on our way to Strephon's house, the lame shepherd seated on his pony, which walked between Monday and me, and the faithful dog taking the management of the flock.

"That was a rare happy day," now remarked Hylas. "Ah, that was a real happy day, on which the companion of my boyhood returned home in safety from his arduous campaigns. His warlike tales, his music and fine figure, soon won the hearts of some of our village lasses, and got him wedded to the richest of them all; since which, however, the house of Orange lost its rule over our native land, and sooner than remain living there under the new dynasty, Strephon and his family quitted the country of their birth, having sold all their property there, with the produce of which my friend bought an estate in this beautiful duchy, and I came here with his family, still to tend my friend's flocks. The clime is congenial to us all, and the way Strephon came to fix on this spot was from his having campaigned here when a soldier in the French army. What Strephon possesses, I know is at my service, but I abuse not his confidence; and although Hylas is the envy of all shepherds who see him riding before his flock, yet, were it not for lameness, I would scorn to ride at this employ.

A spacious farm-house, surrounded by lofty elms, was Strephon's place of abode, and when our procession entered upon the lawn

fronting his mansion, the worthy farmer came out to meet it. He was a tall, military-looking man, apparently verging on fifty, but athletic, and handsome for one of his age. He met us in the courteous pleasing manner peculiar to men trained in that great school, the world, yet said nothing until Hylas had notified that we were travelling gentlemen, who, at his invitation, had come to pay him a visit; but then he welcomed us with great cordiality, and leaving Hylas to house his flock, himself led the way into his house.

In the snug parlour into which Strephon conducted us was his wife, a good-humoured, buxom woman, about forty years of age, two of their sons under sixteen, and a daughter, more than midway advanced in her teens; and in addition to the family party, a benign-looking middle-aged man was housed there, who I was given to understand was the celebrated Senor Albini, well known in that quarter as the Hermit astrologer.

"Friend Strephon," said the Hermit, soon as the ceremony of introduction had taken place, with these good senors' permission we will resume the conversation we were engaged in."

"Most willingly, for I always feel pleasure and derive instruction from hearing you discourse," replied Strephon; "and here," added he, "comes our friend, Hylas most apropos for the subject, as astronomy is this honest shepherd's delight."

"Your last question," said the astrologer, soon as Hylas had seated himself, "regarded the signs of the Zodiac, which apparently you think astronomers attach great importance to; but, my friend, here I must undeceive you, for in this opinion you are altogether in error."

"Why, then, do they make use of these signs?" asked Strephon.

"For the reasons why medical men write their prescriptions in Latin; why religion is involved in deep mystery; the law encumbered with useless words, foreign to the language of the country where it is practised; and that students are made to waste the best years of their lives in learning a smattering of dead languages, as is stated by pedants to prepare them for the study of living tongues."

"If," rejoined Strephon, "I may venture to draw an inference from your observations, the signs of the Zodiac are neither more nor less than mysterious symbols, invented to shade over astronomical ignorance."

"Precisely so; every trade, profession, and religion, has its mysteries, differing in degrees only proportionately to the clearness or obscurity of the rules and principles of the craft, or faith itself, and the relative degrees of knowledge or ignorance of its professors: thus, for example, the business of a carpenter, though of the highest utility, does not abound with mysteries, because almost every man is competent to judge of what he sees done. It is those things of which the great majority of mankind are incapable of judging correctly, such as the drawing up of law papers, or the exact propor-

tion of the drugs required to be mixed in a sick person's medicine, which leave most room for the practice of craft in those who prepare them."

"I feel the full truth of your remarks," observed Strephon. "In my campaigns, many is the fine fellow I have seen suffer—the victim of a wrong medicine."

"It will generally be found," resumed the astrologer, "that the most ignorant practitioners, as well as those professions which are of the least real utility to mankind, are the most remarkable for their frauds—that which is clear and simple being sound and good, and that which is complicated or veiled in mystery dangerous and worthless."

"Far as regards individual merit I strongly feel the truth of these remarks," answered Strephon. "In my military career I could not but discover that the most silent, guarded characters, generally are most shallow in capacity, and show themselves to be the worst principled, where self-interest is at stake."

"Evidently so," said the astrologer. "Justice needs no veil, and genius ever casts mystery aside; hence it follows, that little-minded men, being incapable of feeling generous thoughts, are perpetually on the watch to aggrandize themselves; and, consequently, they rise to the higher stations among mankind."

"The days of Fabricius are long since gone by," observed Monday, with a smile. "Dare to be poor, and emulate a god, is not a maxim for this age."

"So much the more unfortunate for the age," observed the astrologer. "But to return to the subject of empiricism; which must ever be a thriving trade, inasmuch as the world love *mystery*, or, in other words, to be *imposed on;* else, why so many religions, or why so many impostors?

"A quack doctor, simply to become rich, should adopt a mode of practice *ridiculous* in itself, and *contrary to reason* in all its essential points; but if he would amass a prodigious fortune, he must profess doing things in his practice which it is *impossible* can be done. Thus, for example, one man imposes his worthless mixture upon the world as a balm of Gilead, or vegetable pill, endowed with virtues to cure all complaints; and the impostor, in due time, accumulates ample riches. Another designing knave starts up to out-Hector this quack, by professing the power of divination; and this wonder of the world, this more than Delphic oracle, speedily secures to himself a princely revenue: he pretends, by extracting what he calls the acrid humour from them, to prevent certain dreaded disorders afflicting his patients, who, to make the absurdity doubly glaring, usually are persons in sound health, until their bodies get mutilated by the cutting and maiming practice of this destroyer of his species."

Here Strephon's good dame interrupted the discourse by an exclamation of horror, and asked the astrologer if what he had stated really was fact?

"To return to the first subject," said Strephon. "You acknowledge to us that the Zodiac signs are but mysterious symbols, invented to veil over astronomical ignorance; but you have not told us whence these symbols originated."

"To be brief, then, as I see the supper is being put on the table, I will content myself by quoting a passage from the tragedy of King Murat, which, I think, will sufficiently elucidate the subject:—

'History tells,
A shepherd of Mount Caucasus 'twas framed
The Zodiac—a geographic sphere—
Suiting his native land.'

I shall merely add, that what this ingenious shepherd devised as fit symbols to represent the petty state wherein he resided, astronomers, since his time, have but altered and enlarged; they not having been able to devise a more mysterious system than what these symbols afford for amusing the credulous readers of their almanacs."

Excellent food and a hearty welcome were given Strephon's guests at their supper, and choice wine constituted their beverage: compliments there were none shown, for Strephon had learnt in his travels that they serve as a drawback on hospitality.

The meal over, cigars were introduced, when the kind host, after telling the sailor he was acquainted with the customs of England, mixed a large flowing bowl of punch, and ladled out a glass full of the generous liquor to each individual of the company.

"Here is prosperity to old England and her navy," said Strephon, drinking off his punch.

"Thank ye, thank ye, sir," cried the sailor; "it seems that you know something of my country: mayhap, friend, as you so kindly toast the navy, you may have been aboard a king's ship."

"I've been aboard many ships in my time, but of all the decks I ever trod upon, that of an old English frigate is the freshest in my memory."

"Bless me!" exclaimed the sailor, evidently delighted at what he had just heard—"I didn't know you had been aboard a British ship-of-war; however, 'tis a charming place for passing away the younger part of a man's life; isn't it now, sir?"

Strephon smiled at Monday's observation, saying, different men had different ways of thinking, and the merits of every thing were dependant on comparison.

"Odd's blood," asked the astonished sailor, "what can be compared with a British man-of-war? Tall and straight, tight and buoyant, clean and neat, she walks through the water; a man-of-war is the best of homes for a seaman, in all climes he may visit."

"Two dreary long years passed at Sheerness, on board an old frigate, fitted up as a hulk, might serve to cool even the warmth of your zeal," dryly remarked Strephon.

"It would serve as a cooler to any man living," replied the sailor; "howsoever, I hope you've not undergone it." "Indeed I have," rejoined he; "nor can I think of my sufferings, without saying, 'twas a cruel system of the government there, to punish unfortunate soldiers, their prisoners, by shutting them up in loathsome ships, to linger life away, almost in hopeless misery."

Monday now looked somewhat abashed; but I, feeling for him, changed the conversation, by asking Senor Albini if he attached importance to the predictions of his brother astrologers.

"No man in his senses, and acquainted with astrology, can doubt the influence of the stars," replied he. "I myself can cast nativities, so as to foretel a man's ultimate fate, and the great events of his life; but let the doubter examine the predictions of Adam Müller, the Maestrich prophet—for they have become famous as those of the famed Nostradamus—and astrology bear out these prophecies. Alexander of Russia and the King of Prussia received Müller most favourably in the year 1808, and seeing some of his prophecies had been fulfilled, they acted on his advice, and made many happy political changes. Amongst the unfulfilled announcements of this great prophet are these—that many of the German states will change their places—that armies from the west and from the north will cleave the threefold lily; or, in other words, will divide France into four portions—that her monarchs will give way, the old to the young, the young to the younger, and the younger to him who will be their monarch, but is no monarch.

"In the east of Europe there is to be a struggle between two monstrous females—one a heathen Christian, the other a Turk, and each will conquer the other; and then they shall unite in bearing a large book, scented with the richest perfumes, and surmounted with a massy golden crown; which book shall be universally read when Britain knows and keeps her true place, and after a year of universal opposition.

"Müller, who was ignorant of astronomy, looked for this universal opposition on earth, whereas he should have sought it in the sky. He would then have known that his predictions pointed to events subsequent to the year 1830, for in this year all the superior planets, including the new ones, were in opposition. Let us watch, then, the unfolding of events, and endeavour to decipher honest Adam Müller's half-written words, Bera—, Beae—, Bona—be."

Hylas looked wildly around him at the termination of the Hermit's discourse, and endeavoured in vain to repeat the words Bera—, Beae—, Bona—be. Meanwhile, the hostess sat bewildered by the astrologer's allusion to a struggle between two monstrous females.

Till the time came for retiring to repose, friendly instructive conversation passed around among the happy company assembled before Strephon's cheerful fire. This may truly be said to have been a feast of reason; and yet the circumstance communicated by the hermit astrologer of his being able to cast nativities, inspired a great portion of the company with strong feelings of awe towards him, and

caused their hostess to express a desire that her daughter's nativity should be cast by the learned man.

Comfortable beds, in a double-bedded room, awaited Monday and me, and, after we had bid good-night to the company, our kind host escorted us to our chamber; when, having closed the door, he communicated that one of his labourers had recently returned home from a neighbouring village, bringing the news that search was being made there after an Englishman, who had escaped from prison at Parma, and was accompanied by a young countryman of his; both of whom, it was reported, had been seen and spoken to by a courier, travelling *a-pied* on the high road, not more than three leagues off.

With an enlightened man, such as Strephon, I deemed it best to place implicit confidence; and, therefore, frankly communicated to him that I was the party sought after, but explained how unjustly I had been imprisoned.

In return, the worthy farmer remarked, that it would be imprudent for us to travel any further upon the high road, and unhesitatingly offered himself to be our guide over the country, until we had crossed the frontier: however, on second thoughts, he said, it appeared to him that the safest course to pursue would be for me and my friend to travel in company with Senor Albini, whose intention was to depart in the morning the same way that we had to journey, to go to his hermitage; adding, that his highly respected friend was reverenced everywhere, and as he made his journeys across the country on foot, he knew all the by-ways, as well as the most retired cabarets; therefore, if in his company, there would be little or no danger to apprehend of our getting safely over the frontier of the duchy.

We highly approved of this salutary advice, and thanked Strephon for having given it, when the worthy man quitted us to communicate his little plan to the astrologer, so that he might be prepared to depart with his fellow guests at the dawn of day.

Young healthy persons, who have contented their appetite, after they have undergone much bodily fatigue, seldom require the aid of narcotics to drown their senses in oblivion, and I enjoyed one uninterrupted sleep, from shortly after Strephon's departure, to when that worthy farmer awoke me on the following morning. "My worthy guests, the cock has crowed to proclaim a new day; now," said he, "the day too will be fine, for my never-failing barometers proclaim as much."

"These barometers of yours must be choice ones," observed the sailor, rubbing his drowsy eyes; "for my own part, I never could meet with one to be depended on."

"Mine are the barometers of Nature," rejoined Strephon; "I mow, and I reap; I plant, I gather in my grapes, and am guided in all agricultural pursuits by them, for they never fail me."

"Bless us!" exclaimed the sailor, raising his eyes with wonder,

"these are rare compasses to steer by. What! no variation in them? But pray, my good friend, explain their nature, for who knows but they may prove a fortune to a sailor."

"The shepherd, the grazier, and the farmer, who would thrive, must attend to these barometers," replied Strephon. I repeat, they are the barometers of all-bounteous Nature. The spider is busied weaving his silken snares in the open air, and the horse-leach lies quiet at the bottom of the stagnant pool; therefore, depend upon it, for these are unerring prophets, that fair weather is before us."

The astronomer was a true republican in his ideas, for he detested oppression, and loved to see a proper equality among mankind; and also a philosopher, enlightened by the inestimable gifts of learning, without wearing the yoke, too oft attendant on it, of pedantry; therefore, he rejoiced at the opportunity afforded him of aiding a fellow citizen of the world in escaping out of a country where he had suffered unmerited persecution, and was being sought after to be made suffer still greater injustice, which made him signify to me the pleasure with which he undertook the office of my conductor.

The members composing Strephon's family may be said to live all their days, for they rise with the sun; consequently, when we were about to depart, the family all made their appearance, and by its loved mistress's direction, bowls of warm milk, and white wheaten cakes of her own making, were presented to the departing guests.

"Bena—, Bona—be, and the good company of last night, will be fresh in my memory, while I am tending my sheep to-day," said Hylas, when taking his leave of the Hermit astrologer.

"Remember my wishes regarding Augusta's nativity," were the last words of their hostess to the same.

"I've sailed out of fairer ports, but I never left honester people behind me," exclaimed the sailor, taking a farewell look at the mansion he had just quitted.

CHAPTER XXX.

" In spacious subterranean room,
Capp'd by a lofty form of dome,
By viewless chain, hung moon-like ball,
Shedding its ghastly light o'er all.
Things stuff'd, of every kind were there,
That live in earth, in sea, and air;
From frightful monsters of the deep,
To smallest tribes that fly and creep;
All which the Hermit said, were store,
For works of scientific lore."

" This region surely is not of the earth.
Was it not dropt from Heaven? Not a grove,
Citron, or pine, or cedar, not a grot,
Sea-worn and mantled with the gadding vine,
But breathes enchantment."

STREPHON accompanied us a short distance on our way, when he bid us good-by, to return to his peaceful abode. "Adieu!" said the Hermit astrologer, smiling and shaking hands with his pastoral friend; "when the lion roars, and the scorpion spits forth its venom at my hermitage, I shall again seek the rural abode where Mars lives in the clothing of a lamb." "Adieu, worthy friend," was my observation; "believe me, in whatever thorny path I may tread, the remembrance of the happy evening I passed at your cheerful hearth, will ever be soothing to my mind. He who should quit your house in search of felicity elsewhere, would be insane as a lunatic, who weds a scold with the view of enjoying domestic peace." "Adieu, friend and messmate," said the sailor; "the navigator who sails round the globe will not find a snugger port to put in at, than the one in which we lay anchored last night." "Farewell to ye all, my good friends; but let me entreat of you, when you can, to re-visit me; for at no time does my wine look so bright, or my heart feel so buoyant, as when kind guests enliven my house with their presence: to Strephon, friendship is a blessing which cannot be defined; a treasure, without which the world would appear to him a blank." "There," remarked the Hermit, soon as the warm-hearted farmer had got out of hearing, "if happiness be a resident on this earth, with our excellent friend there it is that she resides. Fortune favoured him with some of her choicest gifts, at a time when he had learned their value; and experience has taught him that rich wisdom—content."

After Strephon had quitted us, pleasant discourse, interrupted only by occasional halts to refresh ourselves, served to lighten the fatigue of our journey, until such time as an homely supper, and a few hours of sound repose, at the humble abode of a peasant, closed the events of the day. Next morning we arose with the lark, when, after drinking a draught of new milk, and eating an oaten cake each, we proceeded on our journey, which, as on the preceding day, was enriched by the Hermit's conversation, so as to be made a constant intellectual feast. Senor Albini was a native of the duchy of Parma, and, in his younger days, had filled a high office in the government there; but disappointment in a love affair, and disgust, engendered by seeing his countrymen put under the rule of any foreign state or personage whom it might please certain great powers to nominate, had driven him to seek for happiness away from the busy haunts of man, and a cave, in a mountain between Parma and Genoa, was now his usual residence. But this enlightened personage was no misanthrope; for, though denominated a hermit, he not only loved his fellow-men, and would frequently journey about the country, bent on deeds of benevolence towards them, but he well knew how to enjoy, with moderation, all the rich gifts of Providence; and, when at home at his cavern, he was always willing to share these gifts with his visitors, while the study of astrology, and the vast wonders of Nature, afforded him constant occupation, and served to make him the most instructive and agreeable of companions.

As we trudged along, the Hermit amused my secretary and me by his account of the little court of Parma, presided over by the great Corsican adventurer's imperial widow—the archduchess of different husbands. "Her pageant court," said he, "apes the great one of Paris, and constantly affords an Harlequin exhibition, at which the titled and subordinate grades admitted there, habited in embroidered coats, the breasts of which were bedizened with stars, medals, ribands, and other badges of servility, serve to show the grossest want of manners, which disgusts the man of refinement. In fine, this insignificant court, with its birth-days, drawing-rooms, and levees, exhibits the frivolity of a great one, placemen and pensioners herding to it to grin thanks for favours, and solicit fresh ones, to more grievously burden the state. However, contemptible as we are, we have not yet acted the insane part of some states, which have banished the ablest citizens for publishing matter, not offensive to truth or to religion, but offensive to their courts.

"Monarchs, ministers of state, and aristocrats, would do well to bear in mind, that those who quarrel with truth, merely because truth is unpleasant to them, can make no pretensions to the wisdom of philosophy, or the knowledge requisite for legislation: they should also recollect, that when the press swerves from truth, it loses its influence. Moreover, truth will shame the page of falsehood, and re-convince those who have been momentarily deceived. But here I shall conclude the sad subject," added the Hermit, smiling

a sarcastic smile; "therefore we will leave the head governing powers to the gentle mercy of ministers and courtiers, whose study it is to keep truth from entering their ears, and honesty from approaching their persons."

We arrived at the Hermit astrologer's place of residence on the third day, without any memorable adventure. It was a monstrous cave, divided into several compartments, the largest capped by a lofty form of dome, which abounded with stuffed or petrified bodies of almost every description, and also skeletons. Specimens, too, were here of many kinds of stone, metals, plants, and earth, some, as the Hermit told us, of his procuring, but that the greater part he had found here; while, as to the skeletons and petrified bodies, he considered them to be of animals, reptiles, and birds, which had found refuge in the cavern, in times of devastation, from storms, inundations, and rancorous foes. The furniture of the large compartment was of a character suitable to the place, the legs, for example, of stools, chairs, and tables, being shaped in bone-like fashion, and the little looking-glass was framed in the extended mouth of a huge skeleton of a man. Bars of iron, in imitation of human bones, were fixed in the spot allotted for the grate; and a row of skulls, set in blackened metal, ornamented a shelf, as the drinking cups of the chamber. But, although every thing in the large division of the cavern was of an appalling character, such was not the case in the smaller chambers —there, all was neatness and propriety; the furniture, too, plain and good, and the senor kept two elderly servants—a man and a woman.

It was evening when we reached this extraordinary place of abode, and our host, after ushering Monday and me into his grand sepulchre for all things, smiled the smile of welcome, while he contemplated our countenances, whereon astonishment must have been forcibly depicted; he, however, was well bred, and therefore made no uncourteous remarks; but briefly observed, that this wonderful cave was his own, and that he possessed lands on the Alps, with vinyards, sheep-walks, and a fair share of gold and silver besides.

A lamb, which in that cheap country is worth about one shilling, was now cooked for our supper, and with rich wine as its accompaniment, a most hearty meal we all made; but not in the grand sepulchre, for we preferred a smaller apartment, and wine glasses, to the skulls displayed in that great place of mortality. Good beds were prepared for our accommodation, and on the following morning I proposed departing; but my host so warmly invited me to spend a day with him, to view the rich scenery of the neighbourhood, that I gladly availed myself of his hospitality, when my secretary and I, accompanied by our Hermit friend, much enjoyed a delightful walk, and the magnificent views of the country which it afforded us. In the evening, after our dinner, my enlightened host was pleased to cast my nativity, as also that of my secretary; but as I attached little importance to astrological predictions, I took not much notice of what he foretold, though this much I can call to mind, that he said fortune promised me an aristocratic title, and a wealthy young wife,

with whom I should live long and happy. But how could I do otherwise than laugh in my sleeve at the idea of Andrew, the son of Andrew and Diana Winpenny, living to be ennobled?

Our route to his wondrous place of abode had diverged from the road I proposed journeying for Florence, but my host so strongly recommended me to proceed there by the circuitous way of Lucca, that I could not but agree to follow his advice; and this I did the more readily, as he voluntarily engaged to go to Parma, where he possessed some influence with the government, purposely that he might interest himself in my affair there, and, if possible, get my seized property restored to me.

It was with feelings of real regret that I took leave of this truly good man, and I thoroughly believe that Monday felt similar sensations. He himself saw us depart in a hired carriage from a neighbouring village, after explaining how I was to write to him at a given address at Parma, as soon as I come to a stationary halt, and how, in return, he would write to me, and, if possible, transmit me my baggage.

Every thing tended to make our journey to Lucca a delightful one, inasmuch as we ourselves felt an inclination to be pleased. The weather was beautiful, the roads in good condition, and our fellow-travellers were agreeable companions.

The independent-spirited man feels enlivened, when, having quitted a territory where idle forms and ceremonies predominate, he enters into that of a well-governed republic, were diligence, enterprize, and bustle, mark the prosperity of the people. What a happy contrast!—Instead of satiating the sight with the equipages of sloth and tax-gatherers at their unceasing employ, gathering revenue for the support of profligate idleness, to glad the eyes with beholding the vehicles of traffic, and the great community zealously labouring for the general good!

The diligence of the people of the city of Lucca has given it the name of *Lucca the Industrious*. Their manufactures consist chiefly in silk, and gold and silver stuffs. The olives and oils produced in their territories are very much esteemed. They have also plenty of wine, but not sufficient corn for their subsistence; therefore the common people eat chestnuts frequently instead of bread, as they do in many other parts of Italy. In olden times, Lucca republic usually followed the fortune of the neighbouring cities of Tuscany. Happily, however, for them, in 1279, the people purchased their independency of the Emperor Rodolph for ten thousand crowns, and by this purchase escaped a multiplicity of wars, inevitable under the ambition of sovereign rule, as also the payment of more than five hundredfold the sum given for their liberty, which would, sure as that the sun should ripen their vintage, have been extracted from the people, for the extravagant ends of Italian pageantry.

Anxiety is a bad companion. I felt anxious regarding the fate of my baggage; and, therefore, although I was extremely well pleased

with this little republican city, hastened away from it after a three days' stay. My secretary and I departed post for Florence, denominated by many people the Athens of Italy, and supposed to have received its name from the goddess Flora (for no other spot abounds like its neighbourhood with fragrant flowers). The ancient town was destroyed by the Goths, and Charlemagne built a handsome city on the site of the old one; but instead of its being a record of arts, sciences, and learned men, the history of Florence consists of little more than the wars of the Florentines against Rome, Venice, and Milan, together with the deeds of the Guelphs and the Gibellines, and the remarkable events which happened during the reign of the Medici family.

Scarcely had my secretary and I got housed in this city, after a most pleasant journey, ere I proceeded to pay my respects to a well-known prince, who had hired the palace of a cardinal, to deliver to him a letter of introduction with which I had been favoured by my friend, the Hermit astrologer, who knew the prince intimately, and had been honoured with his company for several days as a guest at his cavern.

I found his highness at home; and he received me most courteously, making many kind inquiries after Senor Albini, for whom he avowed a sincere regard; but the prince being engaged out to dinner that day, yet wishing to pay immediate attention to me, on the senor's account, proposed my accompanying him to the Hon. Mrs. O'Shufflewell's, where he was to dine, and afterwards accompany her party to a masquerade. This, to me, novel scene in high life, promised much amusement, and I thankfully accepted the offer; and accordingly, in due time, had the honour of accompanying his highness to the mansion of the distinguished dowager.

CHAPTER XXXI.

Sir David.—Now for the catastrophe.
Sir Roger.—What catastrophe?
Sir David.—Why the catastrophe of all this long story.

I HAD just written the foregoing quotation from the Loggerheads, and was, with my grey goose quill in hand, and all the glee and good will imaginable at heart, intently occupied in the task of showing the humours of a masquerade, to finish the third number of my Memoirs (the portion I propose publishing every spring), to transmit it to England from my villa near Naples, when my servant disturbed me in my reveries by entering the apartment with a letter in his

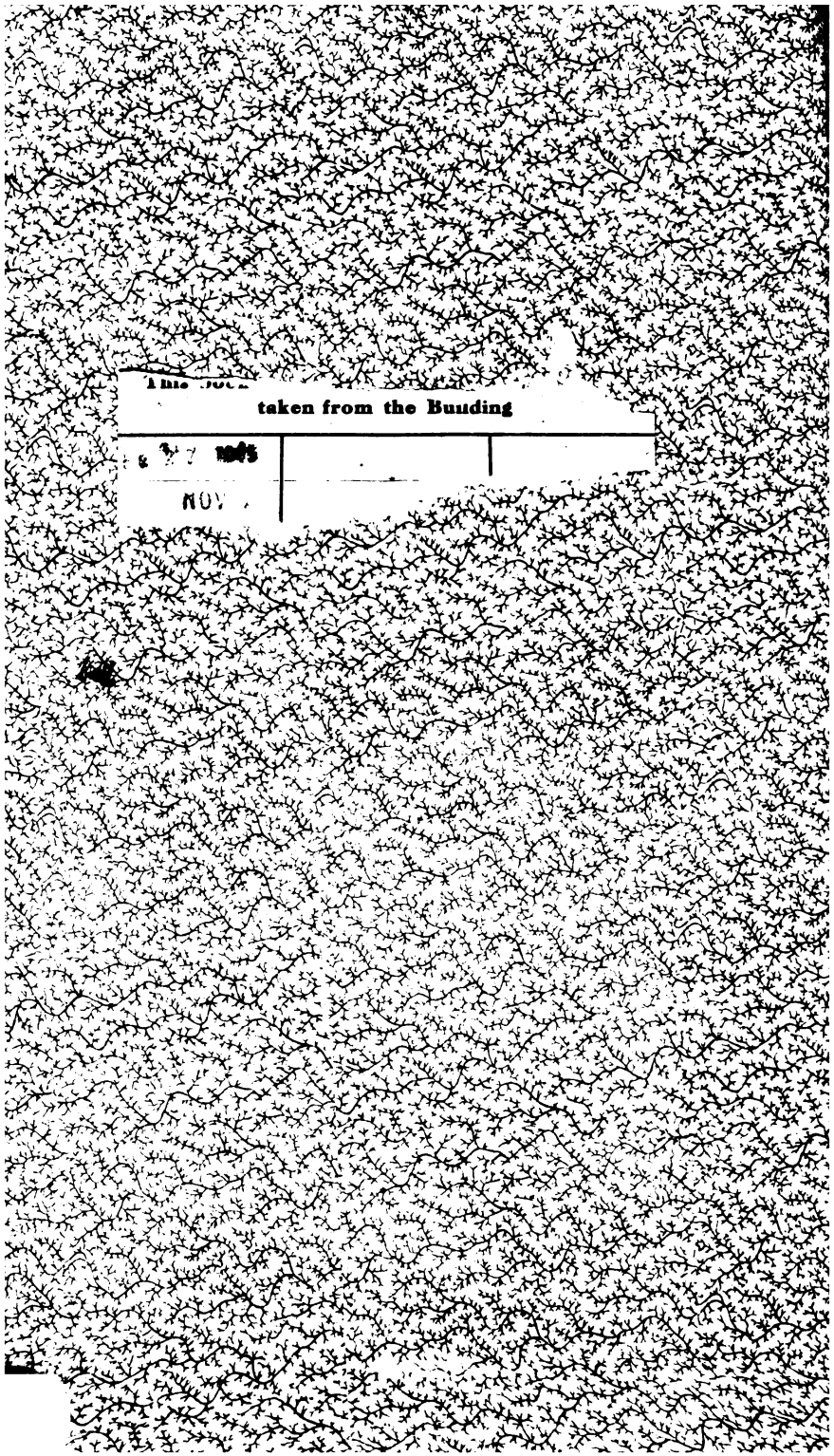
hand, which I eagerly broke the seal of, on discovering that it came from the publisher.

Authors, in general, like parents, are most partial to their youngest bantling, and blindest to its faults, while I, having a fair share of this weakness, now expected pleasing tidings of my two first numbers; nor was I disappointed, and with them came a report of the present *literary* taste of the British public, which may not be deemed unworthy of commenting upon.

My honest publisher tells me Andrew Winpenny is *liked* and *sells well*, notwithstanding that I have mistaken the public taste by *professing* to expose roguery; as, to use his words, the lantern of truth must not be suffered to show much of its light; and this enlightened gentleman complains that we give too much for the money, remarking, that should a Johnson and a Goldsmith arise, the one to publish a new Rasselas, and the other an improved Vicar of Wakefield, they would mar the sale of their works, should they vend sixty-four large close pages for one shilling. "Yes," says he, in concluding his epistle, "you give twofold too much for the money, while, as an honest publisher, I must inform you that it is customary, to *force* the sale of new works by the puffery of bribed reviewers; and even then, to ensure a great circulation for those which are brought out in numbers, it is necessary to embellish them with childish illustrations, make them replete with slang words, abound with Joe Miller jests, and be almost one-continued dialogue."

Having read the publisher's letter, I laid down my pen and bundled up my papers; when, soliloquising, I said, "Aye, be it so, the British public has an undoubted right to please itself, and if it takes interested reviewers' reports on trust, instead of judging for itself, that is not my affair. I would fain have related a few more things, but since truth is not in favour, I will light up no more of its bright beacons. Let the world of fashion amuse itself with Joe Miller jests, slang terms, petty dialogues, and pretty illustrations, meanwhile the Count de Deux Sous will consider how far he can make his history accord with the fashion of the times, so that the public may find a work to its taste in the Second Part of the Memoirs of Andrew Winpenny."

COLE and TAYLOR, Printers, Crane Court, Fleet Street.


taken from the Building
NOV